

• Introduction •

^

^

^

Hey guys my name is Siviwe Phola I'm 19 years old I'm short dark skinned got breads I'm slender I'm Xhosa

^

I live with my Mom Luleka Phola she's not married ... she's 46 I'm the only child she gave birth too

^

Well my life is not easy I work hard to earn money I mean so hard my life became way harder when I found out my Mom has cancer and it's uncured able that ruined everything I planned for my future because I had to look after my Mom since we have no relatives but I don't complain taking care of my Mom I rather be with her than out there in the cruel world

^

The story about my Dad is that he was a gangster he was killed the day I was born he was on his way to the hospital other gangs shoot him I don't know what was the deal

^

My relative's are around but don't want us near them my Mom dated Dad without her Parent's condition when she got pregnant with me they kicked her out my Dad took us to some small neighborhood near town where they tell us rent a room so now I'm the only one who's working to pay the bills put food on the table pay hospital bills when she goes to the hospital and pay the treatment if u say you know pain no u don't know real pain I work day and night trying to make cash

^

At the morning at 5 I wake up and cook pap for Mom then she eats her treatment then work on my self

At 8 I'm at the Fast food shop I work there as a waitress at 3 I'm done

At half 3 I go home

Then after that at half 4 I go to Mrs shaylon house to baby sit her 5 year old daughter when she goes out of town but she doesn't do that everyday she goes out of Town in Weekdays then in weekends its either I'm free after work or if there's someone who needs a hair done I do as that

then I get paid I'm good at peoples hair I love that one day I want to own a salon

^

I just finished grade 12 last year but I can't go to College because my Mother is sick

^

Please guys like and comment to let me know what you think that could mean a lot

-Chapter 1-

:

:

(Its morning I need to get ready for work or I'll be fired if I show up late)

Me:Mom wake up I have to bath you first (she woke up)

Mom:Oh Mntanam ndingum'thwalo emagxeni akho noba ndinongabikho (oh my child I'm just a burden to you its best if I'm not around )

Me:No no (I didn't cry to show her how strong I am I can't show her my tears it will brake her I have to be brave)Mom don't say that I owe you my life now wipe those tears please

Mom:(she wiped them then I bathed her gave her break fast while she was eating I bathed myself then I gave Mom her pills I also ate then I cleaned my mess up)

Me:Mom I'm leaving now (I kissed her goodbye) call me on your cell if you felt pain or anything I'll come

Mom: OK sweety uThixo abenawe(May God be with you)

(I left)

:

:

(I don't even have frnds at work who will want to be my friend a ugly uneducated low class girl that breaks me every time)

:

(I took peoples orders I did my work with a smile on my face so I don't scare away the customers then a group of white males came in I went to take their orders now I wish I didn't)

Me:(smiling) may I take your orders please

Guy1:I'd like coffee with donuts

Me:Donuts should have?

Guy1:Nothing

Me:OK...anyone who will like to order

Guy2:Can we at least be served with a clean lady(laughing )

Me:As you wish sir but give me your orders someone else will give them you yah

Guy2:Didn't you just hear what I said where's your manager ?

Guy3:Simon no she didn't do anything

Me:What have I done to you you don't know me I don't know you

Guy2:Shut up you low call ugly thing we want another waitress(he was shouting ppl were staring other's laughing at me)Why don't you at school anyway you are chasing men around huh you hooker

Me:Did you just call me a hooker?

Manager:Siviwe what's all this

Me:This man came here and...

Guy2:No no no sir your waitress here is very disrespectful

Manager: Siviwe in my Office NOW!!!

Me:What?He's lying he is the one who called me names I was so nice and patient with him

Manager: NOW!!!(furious )

Guy2: (smiling and laughing at me)

Me:You know what I quit(a tear escape my eye)

Manager: You can't quit you need this job(laughing)

Me:That's your problem u think you have it all and you can control ppl I won't be manipulated by you anymore I earn Pennies anyway here

Manger:Siviwe in my office

Me:No(I throw he's book and pen I walked away)

Manager: Don't ever come here again

Me:Don't worry I won't bother

Guy2:Can we have another waitress plz

Guy3:Not cool Bro not cool

Guy2:What you like her( )

:

(I don't know what I've just did oh my God what have I done where in the world will I ever get another job now )

:

(I went home)

Mom:Your early

Me:I quit Mom

Mom:I knew you were anytime soon

Me:How?(smiling )

Mom:Your Boss is a snake

Me:You can say that again

Mom:He used to manipulate me too since your my daughter he's doing the same

Me:But why Mom you were trying to earn a living like any other waitress there

Mom:I don't know sweety and I don't care anyway

Me: (my phone rang it was Mrs Shaylon)

Mrs.S:Siviwe you are free today ain't you?

Me:Yes of cause

Her:Plz come by I'll be out of Town again today

Me:OK Mam(she dropped the call)

:

Me:At least not everyone is bad as my ex Boss

Mom:Not yet my sweety not yet

Me:What does that mean Mom? Mom? Mom?

Mom:...

Me:Mom wake up No no noooooooo nooooo Mom(shaking her)Mommy wake up  
Nooooooooooooo-o you can't leave me Mommy wake up you can't go like that Come on  
Mom it hurts where I'll help you (I pulled her and I saw alot of blood under the sheets) Mom how  
could you not tell me you were in pain Oh Mom (I was crying on top of her then I saw a  
letter written [ Dear My Angel ... I'm sorry I left like this I was tired of being a burden to you ...  
The minute you left I had a huge pain at my back I knew I was going to die I'm sorry leaving like  
this but go and live your life in peace uMama uzakuhlala ekuthanda noTata nakunjalo (Mommy  
will always love you Daddy as well) don't give up help is on its way you'll find your like changing  
for the better every minute I'll always be with you ] I cried reading it I didn't know what to do  
next to call ambulance or what? I told our neighbour she was very close to Mom she said we  
must bury her tomorrow because I have no money to prepare for the funeral and I didn't invite  
anyone but I called my grandparents they didn't respond but I buried my Mom with my  
Neighbour and her family the next morning)

:

:

:

- Chapter 2 -

:

(Its been 3 days without Mom and it feels like ages I was cleaning her room when I saw  
something that caught my attention it was a big box on top of her wardrobe)

Me:(I took it I opened it there were papers written and letters and pictures of my Dad too he  
was so handsome there was an envelope too inside the was a neckless I believed it belonged  
to my Dad I took it I wore it ... It made me feel like I know Dad the letters that are here are  
from my Dads Father asking for forgiveness I wonder what happened it lookes like my Dad ran  
away from home I want to know why but I won't pool for my Dad's family what if they r rich  
they'll think I'm a gold digger)

:

(Days flew as well still looking for a job I found nothing but my life turned around when Mrs  
Shaylon called)

Me:Mrs Shaylon hy this is a nice surprise

Mrs.S:Hey sweetie I just want to say I'm so sorry about your Mom

Me:Thank you

Mrs.S:And another thing I'm moving to Town so I can be close ...

Me: Ohhh I get it(I was breaking what am I going to do )To be close to work wow I'm happy for you

Mrs.S:Why don't you try to find work here you might get some(she dropped the call)

:

(Wait she's right next thing tomorrow I'm there)

:

(I finished cleaning then ate then off to catch some Zzz's)

:

:

:

(Its morning I bathed took out my outfit for the day since it was hot but I need to wear appropriate because I'm looking for work and I'm going to those Fancy big company business I want to be a secretary I wore my black high rise jean with white vest and black blazer with black block heels I got my block heels when I was going to matric dance OK Big town here I come )

:

(The first one I didn't go well...2nd one I was kicked out I didn't quality to be a secretary with my education as they say ...3rd one they didn't need a secretary ...

4th one I was too black ... 5th one I'm too young ... They kept giving me excuses when will this nightmare end I finally found a motel I booked a room from the least money I got better luck tomorrow )

- Continuation -

Dedicated to "Ngcali Ally"

•

(Ahhh its morning already I need to hunt for a job again I washed myself wore my white pencil skirt with white T-shirt with black stripes I let it loose and my black block heels I let my hair loose then took my bag then went downstairs I check out while I was going I found a man selling news articles and they had job offerings at the back I took 1 I read it I found a company where they are actually looking for a secretary but it was far away but I'll go I don't have a money for a taxi especially here taxi fare cost a lot I found the building it was huge and beautiful its doors are made out of glass man ppl got money huh? And the are poor ppl out there who

really need it I went to the receptionist she said I must wait the boss is with a client I waited for like 30 minutes)

Receptionist: You may go in Mam

Me: Thank you

.

(I opened the door oh its an Old man this won't be so hard )

Him:Take a sit young lady I don't have the whole day

Me:(oh its gonna be so hard )

Him:Give me your papers

Me:(I gave him)

Him:Good good so why aren't you at school

Me:My Mom got sick so I had to stay with her besides I couldn't afford to go to College

Him:Oh that's said how's your Mom now

Me:she dies a Month ago

Him:Oh I'm sorry for your lose

Me:It's ok

Him:So why you want this job

Me:To earn money and to build the business of my dreams

Him:What is it?

Me:A salon

Him:Why?

Me:Touching ppls hair is my passion I feel at ease when I do that and I can do a lot of miracles when it comes with hair

Him:Wow you are a dreamer huh?(laughing )

Me:( laughing) yah

Him:OK your grades are good you are very nice as well and you love to smile you remind me of my son

Me:Wow

Him:Nah what the hell YOU GOT THE JOB

Me:Nahhhh for real?

Him:For real you can start Monday ..

At 08:00 your here at 12:00 - 13:00 its lunch then at 16:00 - 16:30 its break time you can do what ever you please and at 18:00 you go home work is over and your Monthly salary is R5000.00

Me:Noway

Him:Is it not enough

Me:What its more than enough thank you Sir you wouldn't regret your decision

Him:I really hope

Me:I promise you Sir

Him:OK you can go now

Me: Thank you so much excuse me

•

(I left his office smiling ear to ear I can't believe it oh my God I better go to sleep now I'm tired )

- Chapter 3 -

:

(Its MONDAY ugh I don't have transport money and lunch money but I'll be confident I'm there to work ... I woke up at 6 bcz I'll walk to work its a long road but I got no choice I made sandwich from the bread I got here for my lunch then did my hygiene process then wore my blach tight dress it was hot outside then my dusty pink heels I got them from Mrs Shaylon she gave me a lot of clothes I love that woman u wish I can see her again I then let my hair loose and I'm thinking of doing breads again bcz they suit me very well and I love them but when I get my monthly salary it's so far away though what am I going to eat for now God will make a way ... I was done by 7 then I went to walk its a long walk and I'm wearing heels and I'm not used to them they are killing me ... After a while I was at work it was 07:45)

Sia:Hey there neighbour

Me:Hey I'm Siviwe I'm knew here

Sia:I've been working here for 3 years now

Me: Oh wow how is this life treating you?

Sia: Good very good my Boss is very nice

Me: Mine too (we are secretaries for different ppl ... Ppl this building is huge bcz ppl here are doing a lot of things this business its about diamond's they make jewelry made up of diamond's and they are beautiful )

Sia: Shhh here comes your worst nightmare

Me: My what?

Guy: (didn't even greet he went straight to the Bosses office)

Me: Sir sir wait you'll get me fired ... (he went in he didn't even look at me I also went in)

Guy: (looking at the window) this is my Fathers office I'll do whatever I please

Me: Sir you'll get me fired

Guy: (He turned) You (surprise)

Me: (angrily) Youuuuu

Guy: Such a small world it is but not you what are you here?

Me: You made me loose my job but I won't let you again

Him: Oh plz you such a cry baby

Me: (I shook my head and went out)

Sia: He's a monster I know

Me: A real devil

Sia: Here comes prince charming and his other prince charming oh they are so dreamy

Me: They are coming here too

Sia: oh yes

Me: Oh God

Guy: Hey

Me: Good morning

Guy: Morning uhm is Dad here yet?

Me: No he's not but there's someone in

Guy2:Maybe its Jake

Guy:Hey I know you

Me:No I doubt

Guy:You that girl uhmmmmm

Boss:Boys you here come inside

(They went in)

Boss:You are doing right they didn't give you a hard time?

Me:No Boss they are so nice

Boss:I hope so

(He went in too)

Sia:How do you guys know each other ? Oh they are so cute

Me:Girl I don't know let's work plz

Sia:Yah totally

- 
- 
- 

(Its luch time we went to the kitchen I made myself coffee then took my lunch with me to dest  
Sia gave me a take away)

Me:No thanks I'll eat mine

Sia:Girl just eat and stop being stubborn

Me:Thanks

Sia:good

Me:(our tables are facing each other we were eating then a man came up to me)

Sia:That's my Bosses son coming

Me:Where? (I looked he looked like money he got swag but nahhh he's too cheesy I know I'm  
not the type to judge but eiii no hell no)

Him:hey(he took my hand and kissed it then my Bosses son's came out Jake looked at me and

walked away I don't know he's problem)

Me:uhmm hy(I was confused should I laugh or smile or what)

Him: A beautiful Angel like you should have a beautiful name

Me:I'm Siviwe its written on my name tag (the Bosses son's laughed)

Him:I'll see you around Siviwe

Me:I'll be here (they laughed again)

Guy:You have some sense of humour huh?

Me:I need to work plz its my first day I won't risk to get fired

Guy:At least give me your number

Me:(the cellphone rang) The Gold Jewelry hello

(He walked away)

(I talked to my caller then I hung up)

Sia:Are you out of your brains?

Me:What?I'm doing my job fine thank you

Sia:I'm talking about Austin

Me: Who's Austin?

Sia: The guy who just asked for your number

Me: Why he wants my number does he aslo work here

Her:Yes

Me:Then he'll see me here at work

Her: He likes you

Me:What? Sia a can't date at work its risky

Her: He was hitting on you and my Bosses son too

Me:hell no

Her: What are you using plz give me and have a try

Me:shut up Sia

Her:If I was you I'd gave him that number a long tym ago

Me:Too bad your not me

Her:Do you know how many girls are dying to be with him ur lucky my friend

Me:Look I can't date at work its against the law

Her: But my Bosses son doesn't work here

Me:Sia just work OK this topic ends now

- 
- 
- 

(I worked my butt off proving to my Boss that I can handle it and he said I did a great work then it was 6 Sia offered me a ride and said she'll be my ride at the morning and after work I can't believe how nice she was to me and funny too ...I then bathed wore my PJs then went to sleep)

- Chapter 4 -

- 

(Oh I'm awake I feel amazing its even raining oh how much I love the rain and the smell of the soil and the freshness of the world the trees so green they smell beautiful I then took a bath then wore my red trousers with black polo neck and black boots with my Mom's coat then after a while Sia called said she's outside I went downstairs then went to the car)

Me:Heyyy

Sia:You have amazing clothes

Me:Thank you

Sia:You got an amazing taste in clothing

Me:Thank you

Sia:You should fix my wardrobe

Me:I sure will now drive I need my job

(She drove)

Her:So you got a man?

Me:No

Her:So why turning...

Me:Sia no I already I don't need trouble now drive

Sia:Girlfriend OK I'll stop so when was the last time you?

Me:I what?

Sia:U know being touched?

Me:Sia shut up

Sia:Me last month i swear I'm probably a virgin by now

Me:Sia stop talking

Her:Talk to me

Me:Uhhh it's been years

Her:(she looked at me her jaws dropped she lost her focus on the road the car swung)

Me:Hey you'll kill us jeez

Her:Sorry there's Noway Siviwe

Me:Ahhh yep

Her:So your stiil fresh

Me:Now just literary stop talking plz

Her:Fyn so plz who was the guy?

Me:Ahhh we were doing grade 9 he actually broke my virginity

Her:Ohw oh it was young love

Me:It doesn't matter anyway now I broke up with him then he left town and changed schools

Her:It was a hard break up huh?

Me:Very he cheated and denied it

Her:Sorry

Me: I thought he loved me you know

Her:Ohw you still into this guy

Me:Mxm its the past

Her:We here finally (we got out of the car)

Me:What time is it (I looked at my phone) it's early

Her:You should throw that away

Me:Very funny Sia very funny I'll have the phone of my dreams soon

(We sat on our desk then I got a call)

.

Me:Gold Jewelry hello

Caller: Hey beautiful

Me:Who's this?

Caller:Johnny

Me:Are you calling for Mr..

Caller:No I'm calling for you beautiful

Me:Sir I'm really busy

Johnny:How about I take you out?

Me:Sir No that's final(I dropped the call)

Boss: Hy Siviwe are my clients giving you hard time?

Me:No Boss it wasn't them it was someone harassing me

Boss: I'm sorry tell me if that person calls again we'll block he's call and never call you again

Me:Yes Sir

(He got inside)

Sia:Who was it?

Me:Some guy called Johnny

Sia:Its my Boss's son

Me:What?

Sia:Yah what did he say?

Me:He said he wants to take me out

Sia:Oh he's a gentleman

Me:No I don't want too ok end of discussion

Sia:OK sorry

•

Someone:Hy

Me:Hy

Someone:I'm here to meet Mr Grey

Me:Do you have an appointment?

Him:Uh yes

Me:OK please wait (I called my boss he said I should let him in)

Me:Go in sir

Him:Thank you

•

(Its lunch time)

Sia:You like cheese right?

Me:Ah yes

Sia:Because I ordered pizza

Me:U are spoiling me I'll get fat I swear

Sia:Its because I love you

Me:I love you too(I hugged her then we ate while we where eating two guys approached us)

Them:Hey ladies

Us:Hey

Guy1:I see you new

Me:Yah I am

(My Boss's son came to us)

Him:Siviwe is Dad alone?

(I went to him)

Me:I'm sorry its just I'm on a break ... Uhmhhh yah he has a client

Him:Oh ok thanks ... Oh wait tell him I was here ok?

Me:Clear

Him:You look nice today

Me:Uhm thanks

Him>Welcome(he walked away)

(I blushed he liked my outfit yeey)

Sia:someone is blushing

Me:Me??? Oh no you got the wrong idear

Sia:Fine Go to work lunch is over

(We then got back to work the client came out I went to my Boss)

Me:Sorry to interrupted but...

Him:You never interrupt come on in

Me:Ah this came for you to sign and the ppl of the next collection called said that the collection will be done by Friday

Him:Great news so far

Me:I know and your son came by

Him:Which one?

Me: Mr Austin

Him:Oh he didn't say why he was here?

Me:No sir not at all he said I should tell you he was here that's all

Him:Ohhh I'll call him ... There you go(handing me the papers)

Sia:so got plans for Saturday?

Me:Ah yes I'll sleep the whole day

Sia:No Siviwe you'll get fat had you seen your body girl?

Me:I don't care

Sia:Let's go on a dinner just a two of us

Me: Why are you so being nice to me?

Her:I don't have frnds my family lives far away I'm alone in my apartment I'm basically lonely

Me: Oh me2 we both lonely

Sia:I really need a friend

Me:I'm here were friends ok?

Sia:Friends

Me:Now work

Sia:

•

•

(Its 6 its time to go home then Austin came to me)

Him:Going home?

Me:Yah

Him:Where?

Me:At a motel in Baston

Him:Oh wow what a coincided I'm actually going to my dry cleaner store its the same way I would love to offer you a ride if it's OK with you

Sia:It fine She'll love it right Siviwe?

Me:(confused) yah Yah of cause (I looked at Sia angrily)

Jordan: Are you done?

Me:Yah let's go

(Sia winked at me ohhhh I'll kill her )

•

•

•

•

I'm tired guys I'll write continuation tomorrow like and comment

•

And thank you for your support your such an angels love you all

•

Admin

- Continuation -

•

(We got in the car)

Him:I figured where I know you

Me:Oh where?(I acted confused but I knew too)

Him: At the take away store if I'm calling it right?

Me:Oh yeah I remember you too now

Him:I'm really sorry you lost your job

Me:Its cool I got a good one now and its paying really well

Him:Good for u...look Siviwe I don't want you to get a wrong impression

Me: No you offered me a ride that's all (then his phone rang)

Him:Sorry I need to get this

Me:OK

(On the phone)

Him:Hey my love

Caller:...

Him:I know my love I'm heading to the dry cleaner to pick up my suit for the my Dads

anniversary

Caller:...

Me: Tonight for sure my love

(Then he hung up ..oh he has a girlfriend hmmm)

Him: Sorry about that

Me: Don't be

Him: So you in a relationship?

Me: Me no

Him: Why not?

Me: Why asking that?

Him: I mean your beautiful and smart any guy would happy to have a girl like you

Me: Oh no thanks for the compliment but no

Him: Ohk

Me: Your girl seems like she loves you

Him: She drivers me crazy

(Then we stopped I was at the motel already I got out of the car)

Me: No you drive yourself crazy.. Thanks for the ride (I closed the door leaving him confused then I walked away)

.

(Went to my room I called Sia)

Me: He has a girlfriend

Sia: What nooo

Me: Why wanting this so bad?

Sia: You'll look sweet together a dark chocolate and a sweet vanilla ohhh picture it

Me: You are crazy

Sia: Fyn is he got a girlfriend

Me:Now this ends here

Sia:Fyn

(We hung up I love her)

•

(Then went to sleep)

- Chapter 5 -

•

(Oh its too hot today I don't know what to wear and its Friday my Bosses anniversary is today after work I'm heading there he asked me to come with Sia as well ... So I woke up and wore my short green dress not too short a little above my knees and not too green uhmmm dark green then black heels then let my hair loose then headed downstairs)

Sia:I love that dress

Me:Oh thanks my friend

Sia:So you are still going out with me tomorrow right?

Me: Yes Sia of cause

Sia: Good .. Your Boss likes you

Me:Why's that?

Sia:He invited you on his anniversary

Me: Its not a big deal

Sia:It is a big deal he never invited his last secretary

Me:He's being nice besides he invited you too

Sia:If you weren't here he wouldn't have

Me:What's your point here?

Sia:It means the Boss likes you and you can date 1 of his son's

Me:Argggg Sia stop about this nonsense

Sia: I'm kidding I'm kidding I know you are still in love with your high school sweetheart

Me: Shut up

(We got out of the car then a man approached us)

Him:Hey Sia

Sia:(Bored) Hey Lucas

Him:Aren't you gonna introduced me to your friend?

Sia:Siviwe this is Lucas ... Lucas this is Siviwe

Him:Hy

Me:Hy(we hand shake)

Him:I've been calling you Sia

Sia:I told you to leave me alone Lucas i need to go to work excuse me let's go Siviwe (we got inside the building)

•

Me:who was that?

Sia:My ex

Me:Why he's here?(she was walking so fast you can see she was a bit upset)

Sia:I don't know and I don't care

Me: Wow so cold

Sia:Can we not talk about this

Me:Of there is something you are uncomfortable to talk about oh wow I've found your weak spot

Sia:(annoyed) work please

Me: this is gonna be good I'll get you

•

(After sometime our mail man came to me with big red roses)

Me:This is for me?

Mail.M:Yes Mam

Me:Thank you (I opened the card it was written the Rose's match your beauty no sign who it was )

Sia:...

Me:(sia is so sad she's not talking I thought I should cheer her up) someone is minding her own business today

Sia:I can't talk plz

Me:OK I won't talk(I smell them oh they smell so sweet and fresh)

Austin: You like them?

Me:Do they come from you?

Him:No no not at all

Me: Oh sorry

Him:Maybe from a secret admire

Me:Oh plz me have a secret admire never

Him:You never know..(he looked at his watch) oops I lost track of time I gotta go

Me:bye

Him:Bye

•

Me:Sia talk to me(I went to her)Sia come on you look sad do you know how boring it is without you talking I miss you already

Sia:Oh really

Me: Yah don't ever scare me like that OK?

Sia:OK (we hugged)

Sia:so who brought you the flowers hooo you got a secret admire

Me:I wish I didn't let you speak

Sia:

•

(It was 6 and at 7 its the anniversary I should be there so Sia went to the motel with me to change then will go at her apartment just to save time...We got in)

Sia:Your room is so clean

Me: I don't like things hanging around

Sia:Your Mom raised you very well

Me:She did

Sia: So wearing what?

Me:This( it was a red long tight dress it showed my curve's I wore it at my prom night it was a gift from Mom and black heels)

Sia:Beautiful but not those shoes I'll give you mine at home OK

Me:Ok

Sia:Now put on the dress girl

Me: OK (I did as she said)

Sia:Damn girl look at you

Me: Don't exaggerated Sia

Sia: Your beautiful my friend look at that Ass

Me:Shut up

(We were done then went to Sia's apartment)

Sia:Welcome to my road not too clean though like yours

Me:Wow but its beautiful

Sia:Make yourself at home I'm going to change

Me:ok

(After a while she came out looking stunning she was wearing black tight short dress with red block heels then red lipstick then gave me gold heels then we went to the anniversary)

•

•

•

Me:Holly shit this house is huge and beautiful

Sia: I know

Me: Wow I never ever in my life ever think I'll walk in a house like this ever

Boss:Siviwe you made it and Sia please come in make yourself at home

•

•

•

I'll continue tomorrow

- Continuation -

•

(We walked in my Boss introduced us to her wife and daughter)

Them:Hy

Us:Hey(we hand shake)

Me:I'm his secretary

Wife:Oh I've heard a lot about you

Me:Nice things I hope

Boss:Don't worry you never did anything wrong

Girl:Mine his daughter Lucy

Sia:I'm Sia

Me:I'm Siviwe

Lucy:Ur not white right?

Me:No I'm not my skin is dark

Lucy:I always wanted a black friend ppl say you guys are cool

Me:I don't know about cool

Lucy:Can we be friends with Sia of cause

Me:of cause

Sia:Friends

(We were having fun when Mr rude guy came to us)

Him:Ladies

(I was so pissed I didn't even greet him)

Sia:Hey Jake

Him:Lucy the ceremony will start soon they need you there

Lucy: Bye girls will be in touch

Us:Bye

•

(The ceremony started it was so beautiful saying their vows to each other they looked so happy he's wife looked so beautiful they gave birth to beautiful children too)

•

(Then after a while the ceremony was done ppl were dancing and having fun)

•

(A guy on my back)

"Would you like to dance?"

Me:(I turned it was Austin)No what with your girlfriend think she'll get the wrong idea

Him:Please besides she's not here

Me:But Austin

(He dragged me by my arm to the dance floor we danced)

Him:Ur a good dancer

Me:Oh plz I suck

Him:Come on you got moves

Me:Don't exaggerate I wish

Him:OK I'll stop

Me:Your parents look so happy

Him:Yah they love each other so much

Me:Wow so cute

(we talked I noticed Jake looking at us strangely urh I hate him)

•

(When we were done dancing we went to get something to drink)

Him:So how about your family?

Me:I don't have a family

Him:Why's that?

Me:My father died the day I was born my Mom died a month ago

Him:Oh I'm really sorry how about your siblings?

Me:I have none

Him:I'm really sorry it must be very hard for you and you all alone

Me:I'm used to it now

Him:At least have Sia

Me: Yah I love her a lot

Him:She's crazy but in a good way

Me:I know she's good company

(We talked almost the whole night I had a grt tym with him he's not too bad and then the ceremony was over)

•

(Me and Sia went to the car)

"Hey i had a great time with you"

(I turned it was Austin)

Me:I had a great time too

Him:Hope it could happen again

Me:Maybe ... Bye Austin (I got in the car we left)

- Chapter -

•

(Its Saturday today Sia is taking me out on a club its my first time but I really wanna go to meet people you know then she called)

Sia:My F are you done its 6 already

Me:No I don't know what to wear

Sia:I'm coming don't stress

Me:Hurry

(After a while she was here)

Sia:Ok fashion doctor is here

Me:Oh thank God go and look for yourself my wardrobe is a nightmare

Sia:Its not that bad actually you got beautiful clothes but not for clubs

Me: Then what?

Sia:Uhmhhh try this on

Me: No no no hell no Sia

Sia:What?

Me: its too much too short

Sia:At least try it on

Me: Fine

(I wore them)

Sia:See you look crazy sexy

Me:Let me see move from the mirror plz (I saw myself my Mom would kill me if she ever saw me wearing this but she won't)

Sia:See?

Me: I love it(it was a short high waisted not tight skirt it was dusty pink with my white T-shirt with black high heels I let my hair loose Sia was wearing short high waisted leather shorts they were black and red T-shirt with red high heels she let her hair losse too we were so hot)

Sia:Done let's go

Me:Let's go

•

•

•

(We were at the club then we went to the bar to get drinks I don't drink I orders cocktail sex in the beach she ordered it too we were not planning to drink but to have fun)

Sia:Those guys are checking us out

Me:huh I can't here you the music is loud

Sia:(in my ear) Those guys are checking us out

Me:where?

Sia:Don't look now but at the corner table at your left side

Me:(I then looked)

Sia:I said don't look now oh they are coming this way

Me: Oh Gosh

•

Them:Hey ladies

Us:Hey

Guy1:I'm Ben

Guy2:I'm Carlos

Me:I'm Siviwe

Sia:I'm Sia

(We talked to these guys to tell you the truth they were flirting but we were not into them after a while talking to them I had a feeling as if I was watched I turned my head Jake was here at the club with some girls drinking he saw me I saw him then the guy whispered in my ear)

Ben:Wanna go out its too crowded here

Me:(I giggled then Jake looked away and took the 2 girls away they left what the hell is wrong with him)

•

(After some time we left the club sober not a single drop of alcohol)

•

Sia: Goodnight my friend

Me:Thanks for dropping me off

Sia:No problem anytime

Me:Nyt

•

(Then I went in it was 10 then the security guard let me in then went to my room I was so tired I didn't even took off my clothes I dozed off the minute my head hit the pillow)

•

(Its morning Sunday I kept thinking of Jake first he was nothing but rude to me now he's acting strange Idiot)

- Chapter 5 -

•

•

•

(Weeks flwe by and my life is going very well but can't stop thinking about Mom ... So I woke up it's pay day ohhhhh I'm moneyed sanna I wore my red body hugging dress with red heels Sia arrived then went downstairs)

Sia:Whuuuu my friend your so HOT

Me: Shut up

Sia:You shutting me up

Me:Shut up (her phone rang)

Sia:Ahhh unknown number put it on loud Vee I'm driving

(I did)

Caller:Am I talking to Sia?

Sia:Yes who's this?

Caller:It's me Lucas

Sia:Vee drop this call

Me:Talk to the guy maybe he got something to say to you

Him:Sia please just listen for a sec

Me:Sia please

Sia:Fine talk Lucas

Him:Sia I never meant to hurt you can we meet and talk?

Sia:What hell no

Him:I beg you

Sia:Where?

Him: Thank you ahhh at Mug and bean plz at 6:30 after work

Sia:OK

Him:Thank you

Sia:Yeah whatever

(I dropped the call)

Me: Who is he

Sia:My ex

Me:What happened?

Sia:That idiot cheated on me with his college

Me:Wow I'm really sorry to hear that

Sia:I've gotten over it

Me: You really loved him?

Sia:a lot Vee

Me:I'm sorry don't be said you'll be fine just meet up with him and sort things out maybe...

Sia:There's no way I'm making up with him

Me:OK calm down you won't just show up

Sia:What about you?

Me:Me? Don't worry I'll catch a taxi

Sia:OK

(We arrived at work then got inside the building we went to our tables Jake got in the Bosses

without greeting again oh he's full of himself I continued doing my job then got in my Bosses office to leave some papers for him to sign I don't want to loose them)

•

(I got in)

Him:Look this is my Father's office I can come and go as I please so do test my patients (I looked at him till he finishes he was angry)

Me:I didn't come here for you I came to put these papers on my Bosses desk so don't test my patients either

Him: Who are you to talk to me like that?

Me:What is your problem with me (I looked sad) why do you hate me so much what do I ever do to you I don't deserve to be treated like this I'm a honest woman doing an honest leaving

Him:...

Me:Yah that's what I thought SILENCE excuse me (I walked out)

•

•

•

•

Jake's POV

•

Hy my name is Jake I'm 25 some of you probably hate me by now I'm tall white have beard and fade I have brown hair and blue eyes body builder with a lot of tattoos well with these looks I can get any girl but I don't like using girls unlike my Brothers I had a girlfriend but she broke up with me because of the way I am ... look I'm not fun she wanted a lot of things like going on vacations but I have to work going on parties every weekends I'm not down for what ever I have a life and plus that she left me for another guy but she left I really loved her ... Ah let's talk about this Siviwr girl I know I was a little hard on her but I would really like to apologise for my behavior but she wouldn't even want me near her especially now ... My dad entering)

•

•

•

Him:I see you and Siviwe are getting very well

Me:Why's that?

Him:She doesn't let anyone here when I'm not here but let's you in

Me:oh even my Brother?

Him: Yes you the only one

(Damn I was disrespecting this girl she was nothing but doing her job and being nice to me)

Him: So got any collection

Me:Yah yah

Him:Your head is outer this world

Me:Me pshhh no (I faked a smile)

Him:OK let me see our new collection

(We discussed work then I left I looked at Siviwe I need to apologise to her one way or another)

•

•

•

Siviwe's POV

•

Me:ahhhh I hate him why is he even looking at me JERK

Sia:Who?

Me:(whispering) Jake

Sia:Ohhh him what now?

Me:He said hurtful things to me again

Sia:He's bitter but has a soft spot

Me:Huh (laughing sarcastically ) I doubt

Sia:And a heart but very deep

Me:well it's must be very deep bcz he's not showing it

Sia:Its a matter of 2 I won't interfere

(Then it was 6 after a while I wanted to go home I didn't feel like doing anything)

•

(I went home then went to bed tomorrow I'm going to buy groceries and buy a new phone so I could take cool pictures and update on my Facebook )

•

•

•

- Chapter 6 -

•

(I woke up my life is changing bit by bit is Saturday today I've been working my ass off this past few days the money I got Tuesday did me a good thing I brought a new smart phone and I brought groceries my life is changing to the better and I'm happy ... I went to bath then did my hair then ate cereal then went downstairs)

Me:You always on time

Sia:I know

Me:What's with the shades

Sia:I felt like wearing them (smiling)

Me:Okay

Sia:Shall we go

Me:Yah of cause

Sia:(Drove off) I see you got rid of that hilarious cellphone of yours

Me:What? I would never do that I still have it ... See(I showed her)

Sia:Arg get rid of that plz

Me: Never we from way back with this one

Sia:Whatever

Me:Hey I want you to do me a favour

Sia:What?

Me:I want to visit my parents grave

Sia:Okay sure no problem when?

Me:I'll tell you OK?

Sia:OK its a done deal

Me:Thank you so much

Sia: That's what friends do

•

(We arrived at work ... And work was good like always but when something shocking happened)

Sia: Siviwe I think you have to see this

Me:What?

Sia:Come

Me:What someone died?

Sia:No but you will

Me:Pshhh no

Sia:Look (I saw my motel on fire the whole building was on fire )

Me:No no my stuff

Boss:What's that?

Me:No no noooo(getting close to the TV its huge and on the wall)

Sia:(replying my Boss)Its her motel

Boss: Oh that's not good its into ashes now at least the bottom half is OK

Sia:She's on the top floor

Boss:Oh wow you can come and live with us

Me:No no no Boss I can't

Sia:I'm her friend she can come...

Boss:No I insists (he left)

Me:what?(shocked)

Sia: I don't know(confused)

•

•

•

Booses POV

•

Hy I'm Henry Ellis I'm Siviwe's Boss she is a very good employee she does her job very well and I like her .. And bringing her to my house is a good thing she's a very good person and so kind and my baby girl Lucy loves her they could be good friends plus Lucy is mixed up with bad people I don't like her friends NOW I want her to be friends with Lucy ... And I can't leave my employee out on the streets

•

•

Continuation coming up later

- Continuation -

Sia:Whuuu shit this is gonna be fun

Me:Shut up Sia

Sia:Ok

Me:What am I going to wear

Sia:I'll give you mine

Me:Your a good friend thank you

Sia:After work at my place for your clothes then I'll drop you off at Jakes House

Me:Not funny ok my friend

•

Hy I'm Henry I'm Siviwe's Boss I hope you all already know uhmmm I offered Siviwe a place to stay because she is a good employee she does her job very well and I won't just sit there and look at my employee staying on the streets noway plus Lucy my daughter loves her and they could be good friends plus Lucy is mixed up with wrong ppl I don't like her friends they are bad influence on her so I want her to be close to Lucy and I'm helping too

•

(We got back to work I wasn't focused at all I was thinking about living under the same roof as Jake ohhh its gonna be a nightmare that guy can't even pretend to like me ... Before I new it it was late and time to close)

Boss: Siviwe let's go

Me: Uhhmn Sir I'll go to Sia's place first for some few clothes then I'll she will drop me off at your house later on

Boss:OK don't be late dinner is served at 19:00

me:I won't disappoint

Boss:Ok bye

Me:Bye

•

(Let's go then it would be 7 soon...we got in her car and drove off ... At some time we arrived at her apartment she showed me her closet)

Sia:Prepare yourself this is my world

Me:What no no no

Sia:What

Me:You got a lot of short staff here

Sia:I know right

Me:I can't wear those

Sia: Come on you'll look cute besides short things suit you and beggers can't be chooser's

Me:fyn Pack yourself Sia I won't I don't even know what to choose

Sia:Ok

Me:and be quick

Sia:Hey I'm all alone in this please

Me:Sorry

•

(After a while she wad done then she drove me to my Bosses house )

Sia:Good luck

Me:Thanks I'll need it

(She drove off I went to knock on the door)

House maid: Hy

Me:Hey I'm here for my Boss Mr Henry

(Boss at the background)

Boss:I'll get it Martha you can go now...come on in

Me:Thank you

Wife: Ahhh you must be Siviwe right?

Me:Yes

(We hand shake)

Wife:What a pleasant surprise

Me:Like wise

Boss:Everybody to the leaving room pls

(Yelling they all came arg Jake is still on his stupid scary face that's not new then Lucy came running to me)

Lucy:Girl(yelling)

Me:Hey

Lucy:I see begs are you gonna live here huh huh? Daddy is she gonna live with us???(excited)

Boss: Ahhh yes

Austin:Oh welcome

Me:Thank you but for just a little while

Wife: You can stay as long as you want its fine

Boss:Martha take her begs upstairs

Wife:What happened at your place

Me:There was fire this afternoon

Lucy:Oh I saw it on news they say one of the ppl who lived there left stove on

Me:Yah

Wife: Oh I'm sorry its not safe out there

Lucy:Wanna see my room?

Me:Uhhmm

Boss:Lucy dinner first

Lucy:Ok Dad

(We went to eat dinner Jake was on a src face he wasn't saying a word that guy is dramatic shem)

•

Jakes POV

(Siviwe is here maybe I'll get a chance to apologise to her I was a little mean and unfair to her)

•

(At the dinner table)

Wife: Jake?

Jake:....

Wife:Jake?

Jake:...

Wife: Jaaake(yelling)

Jake: Huh?What?Mom?

Wife:What is wrong your silent

Jake:Ah nothing it's just I got a lot in my mind

(We talked it was fun they are all good ppl I don't know where Jake get this stubbornness...after eatiy Lucy showed me my room?)

•

Lucy:I'm happy your here I will finally have a sister I never had

Me:But you have your brothers

her: They are boring plus they always busy I want company

Me:But you go to school right?

Her: Yes but when I come home that's all over I get bored here this house is huge and no one to talk to even when I want a girl talk.

Me:Lucky I'm here

Her:Yes I'm happy plus my brothers are always busy

Me:With what?

Her:Jake is busy with work Austin with his girlfriend and Zayn with girls and clubs

Me:Is Zayn your Brother too?

Her:No cousin

Me:Oh

Her:But I love her like a brother...(she opened doors of another room)

Her:This is your room

Me:Its beautiful

Her:I know

Me:Its gold I love gold and its huge

Her:Yah

Me:Ok my God thank you

Her:No problem uhmm the door on your left is Jakes room after his door then mine on your right is Austin's room after Zayn room you are in between ... DON'T GET IT MIXED UP

Me:I won't (I wasn't paying attention) ohhh my own bathroom and my own closet ahhh this is life but for a while

Her:Night see'yah

Me:Night this is amazing

(I changed into PJs it was pink vest and pink shorts really Sia then I slept ohhh the bed is so comfortable)

- 
- 
-

- Chapter 7 -

- 
- 
- 

(Its morning I took a shower then something weird happened I was putting on my perfume but I didn't realise that I spray was facing my eyes now what happened is that I sprayed my eyes I screamed so loud it was burning my eyes were I red I swear they way they were burning it felt like they will pop out tears where falling on my face I threw water on my eyes to clean then but it didn't work I was crying I needed someone to blow my eyes)

Me:I should go to Lucy ... Lucy(yelling) which one is her's the first door on the left I guess(I knocked) Lucy (my eyes were closed I was with my towel my hair was wet and I was still wet ... She opened the door) Lucy help me pls (I was crying) pls blow my eyes I sprayed them with a perfume and it hurts... Lucy ?..say something for Godness sake blow my eyes...don't just stand there (she blowed my eyes) pls again pls (she did it again then it felt better then I wiped my face and my eyes)

Me:Oh thank you I almost died my eyes are hurting

Man's voice:Don't exaggrate

Me: (I looked at this person ) Jake?

Him:Morning to you too Siv....

Me:No no cut the act Jake where's Lucy?

Him:This is my room girl don't come here and yell at me?

Me:You will never change (I walked away)

Him:Hey wait

Me:What?

Him:Close the door on your way out

Me: Ahhhh

(I left his room I bumped into Austin)

Him:What are you doing in Jakes room wearing a towel?

Me:(I dropped my jaws I didn't know what to say)I...I...uhmmm (I told him the whole story

Him: (he just laughed)

Me:Yah silly right

Him: oh Vee ok I gotta go

Me: Xo

(He left I went to my room...how dare he how Jake dare to touch me he should have let me go blind nx ... Oh God I saw him with a towel he didn't had a shirt on and he saw me with a towel oh God )

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

- 

(That girl is so hard headed I helped her she didn't say thanks she's so stubborn ahhh I can't wait for her to leave and why her room is next to mine anyway arg)

- 
- 
- 

To be continued...

- Continuation -

- 

(I wore a red dress Sia's clothes are so short I hope my Boss doesn't say anything then black heels thank God she's my size ... Then took my hand bag then fixed my bad then I heard a knock that better not be this Jake guy or I'll squeeze his balls he better not try me I opened the door oh it's Martha)

Martha:I'm here to clean your room Miss

Me:Its already done I did it myself

Martha:Pls Miss next time I'll do it for you that's why I'm getting paid

Me: Oh Martha don't stress it's ok and don't call me Miss I'm bailey your daughter call me Siviwe or Vee OK?

Martha:ok

(She left oh she's so nice then I went downstairs)

Lucy: How was your first night?

Me:Uhmhhh good

Lucy:Come let's eat

(I went to eat I'm not used being served their house maids do everything tjo they probably get paid a lot then the whole family set down then we ate)

Wife: So Siviwe were are your parents?

Me:(I don't like talking about my family I get very emotional but I'll keep myself together now) uhmhhh my parents died

Her:oh I'm sorry

Me:Its OK

Lucy:That's sad when?

Me:(Lucy is digging a whole in me again) uhmhhh my Dad the day I was born my Mom few months ago the day I lost my job (Jake & Austin choked by their food)

Boss: Hey what's with you two eat probably or you'll get choked and die in my table so plz

Wife: I'm so sorry baby girl life must have been hard for you

Me:Very hard ... Oh well I better go

Boss:So early then go with Austin he's there as well

Austin:Ahhh sorry Vee I'm not I'm picking up Hanna

Boss:For what?

Austin: For what Dad please

Boss:Stop seeing that goldigger or you'll be sorry

(Austin left)

Boss:Son drop off Siviwe for me

Jake:Yes Dad

Boss:I knew I should always count on you

(What?what? There's Noway I'm getting on a car with that guy noway)

Jake: Let's go

Me:Ok (I followed him )

Lucy:Girlfriend that dress hugs you (holding herself) so tight

Wife: Lucy you are making her shy

Me:

(Jake was so annoyed)

Him:(opened the door for me)

Me: Uhmhm thanks

Him:Don't thank me

Me:huh yah right (I got in)

Him:(closed the door then he got in and drove off) sorry about your parents

Me: Don't go there you should apologise for treating me like a nobody the first day we met

Him:About that I was going to say I'm sorry

Me:Oh really then what happened

Him:look Siviwe I'm sorry for disrespecting you and looking down on you and for every other thing I did wrong to you I really am (he stopped the car)

Me: Oh God drive

Him:No look

Me:(I looked at him)

Him:I'm sorry for making your day so sad that day we first met I didn't know about by Momma

Me: (I looked away) how would you know

Him: I'm sorry I wanted to say this but I was...

Me:Was what huh busy with your one night stands at clubs

Him:I was scared of what you might say like now ur shouting at me

Me:I'm not shouting fine sorry (I heard myself I was really shouting)

Him:I'm so sorry from the bottom of my heart

Me: (He looked sincere) fine forgiven can you drive now (I looked at him hmmn his Cologne is so good)

Him:OK (he drove)

Me: (I saw a picture of a cute baby girl) who's that?

Him:My daughter

Me:(I laughed so hard guys it was hilarious what came out of his mouth " my daughter" oh pls ) yah right

Him:I'm serious

Me: there's no way (he showed me pictures) oh wow she is your daughter where is she?

Him:At a boding school

Me:Why taking a child there?

Him:After her Mother left us for another man she didn't take anything good

Me:But taking her to that place wasn't an option she needed you more than ever you shouldn't have

Him:I just realise that she's coming back this Friday I miss her so much

Me:Good ... She's so cute

Him:I know

Me: She has your eyes (that slip my mouth guys I didn't know oh God what is he going to say)

Him:Thank you her mother used to say that

Me:(oh thank God )

Him:I'm glad we put our difference aside

Me:Yah me too

(We arrived at work)

Him:Oh your here

Me:Yah thank you so much

Him: Anytime your good company

Me:(Did he just say anything and I'm good company? Hmmm) OK thank you bye (I felt like

someone was watching me I turned it was him why is he looking at me then he drove)

•

(Here comes Sia running to me and smiling oh she saw that and its gonna be the topic of the day )

Sia:Girl was that Jakes car you just got off in?

Me:Morning to you too Sia .. I'm good? Of cause I'm good I had an amazing night with your pink PJs and my Bosses family is so nice

Sia:Vee come on

Me:yes it was

Sia:No cat fighting I hope

Me:No actually he apologised

Sia:what Mr Jake himself?

Me:Yes himself

Sia:How tell me

Me:(I told her the whole story)

•

•

•

Jakes POV

•

Me:(talking to myself in my car)She's a nice beautiful lady why didn't I notice that she that? She looked way beautiful when her hair is wet ... When she asked me why I wasn't blowing her eyes its just she was in front of me half naked and wet what a guy gotta do I won't lie I was turned on but didn't show it I must like this girl but not a girlfriend maybe as a sister but you can't get turned on when you look at your sister but she's young for me she's 20 I'm 26 besides she is not on that page maybe she likes my young Brother Austin)

•

•

•

Siviwe's POV

•

Sia:Oh the eye blowing was hilarious you like him

Me:What ewww not in million years

Sia:I'll tell you why

Me:I don't wanna hear it

Sia:Maybe he likes you too

Me: Let's work pls that's why we get paid ... Actually I ask about your date

Sia:Siviwe let's work

Me: yah I thought so too

•

•

•

- Chapter 8 -

•

(I was at work when my purse fell all of my stuff were everywhere I was tidying my desk it was time to leave)

Boss:Who's this? (He saw a picture of my Dad)

Me: My dad do you know him?

Boss:That explains a lot

Me:What do you mean?

Boss:Your long hair,and your smile I know this guy

Me:What from where?

Boss: He was my best friend no no I gotta go

Me:Boss wait ...wait up (yelling) Boss(he was already gone what does he know about my father?  
)

Sia:What was that all about?

Me:I don't know(confused)

Sia:Come on let me drop you there

Me:Sure (I'm still confused I don't know what my Boss meant about that)

- 
- 
- 

Boss Henry

- 

(I called Cecilia my Wife)

Cc:Hey Bunny

Me:I found her

Cc: Who found who?

Me:Sophia

Cc:What? Where is she?

Me: Its Siviwe

Cc:What Noway it can't be her

Me:It is and if someone finds out she's Blade's daughter shes dead

Cc:Oh no we have to keep our promise

Me:We have I can't believe this

Cc:How did you find out?

Me:She has his photo in her purse

Cc:Oh my God we have to tell her

Me:Are you crazy I can't do that

Cc:Then I will

Me:Don't you even think about it

Cc:She has to know

Me: Look I was able to leave those ppl I won't dug up the past Cecilia pls

Cc: My love we will just tell her about her Father she has to know

Me: What if she goes to those ppl who killed him what will she do? she will go there

Cc: But...

Me: No but's OK

Cc: OK

(I dropped the call I can't risk her life not now I just found her I have to keep her safe I promised My best friend I will those where his last words when he died "protect my daughter" and I will do that ... )

- 
- 
- 

(I was at the house the cell rang)

Me: Hello

Caller: Is Jake home?

Me: Uhmhm I don't think so

Caller: Well then call him

Me: Excuse me who do you think you are? Huh? (I was angry)

Caller: I said...

Me: Call him in his phone idiot (I dropped the call) that must be Jake's girlfriend

Jake: Who was that ?

Me: oh your here your girlfriend just called

Him: I don't have a girlfriend

Me: yah right

Him: I swear but there's someone I'm interested in though

Me: (walking away) oh I feel sorry for her

Him: Why?

Me:(I stopped and I looked at him) Because she'll have the stubbornness boyfriend in the entire planet earth

Him:No I'm not

Me:(I went close to him)You need a woman who will know how to calm you down ... You need a woman who will treat you for who you are ... You need a woman who knows how to calm the beast in you

Him:Wow where can I found her

Me: Anywhere other than clubs

Him:Hey don't act innocent you too were there flirting with that guy

Me:I was in flirting with him

Him:He kissed your neck and you giggled like a 3 year old baby girl who just got a doll on Christmas

Me: He wasn't kissing me the music was loud I couldn't here was he was saying so he got closer

Him:Then you giggled

Me: He was saying a joke it was so funny

Him:Care to share

Me:What now (I walked away)

Him:(yelling) I feel bad for man who will date you

Me: (I stopped and I looked at him) why's that?

Him:Your hard headed you don't listen to anyone

Me:I do

Martha:Miss can I clean your room now

Me:No Martha I'll do it myself

Martha:But Miss its the Bosses orders

Me:Martha its OK

Martha: OK Miss (she left)

Him:See???

Me:See what??? That?

Him:Yes that

Me: I don't like ppl doing things for me im used doing myself

Him:That's what I mean

Me:I'm leaving for real this time

Him:Come on

Me:These heels are killing me (I left)

•

•

•

Jake's POV

•

(Mom was starring at me)

Me: How long were you standing there?

Mom:Long enough to see love

Me:Mom don't be silly

Mom:Why not she's beautiful, smart,you got a lot of things in common plus she's the woman that calms the beast in you I've never seen you this happy since your daughter left for boarding school

Me: Mom don't exaggerate plz (I went to the kitchen to drink water)

Mom:OK you'll know I won't force you but MY SON IS INLOVE FINALLY

Me:(Angrily) MOM keep it quiet pls

Mom: OK OK (she left)

Me:(Talking to myself) me in love yah right as if

•

•

•

(I went to sit at the couch going threw my phone then Siviwe came downstairs she went to the kitchen out house maids were making dinner)

Her:Can I help?

Martha:No Miss do you want us to get fired

Her:No of cause not its been a while since I cooked plz I'll cook the meat I'm good at it pls

Martha:OK if you mess it up

Me:I won't (she was so happy and smiling I found myself smiling too)

Zayn:What are you looking at?

Me: (I fixed my face I didn't see him) uhmmm nothing

Zayn:Where you checking out maids?Dude

Me:No I wasn't

Zayn:(he looked at the kitchen he saw Siviwe) you were checking her out

Me:Oh don't be silly

Zayn:Bro I saw your face ... Do you like her?

Me:Dude no pls I'm busy (I left)

Zayn:I know she's hot bro

- 
- 

Siviwe's Pov

(At the dinner table we were all gathered together)

Siviwe:OK ppl I cooked the meat myself to thank you for welcoming me at your home I really appreciate it so much

Lucy: Ohhh you shouldn't have it looked delicious

Boss:And smell delicious too

Wife: Hmmm thank you baby girl we appreciate it too for you to come here some ppl's lives are changed (smiling)

Me: Oh wow really

Jake:Uhm thanks Siviwe ... Can we eat now (Zayn and Miss Cecilia were laughing )

Henry:Are we missing something?

Lucy:I think so dad

Me:I'm also lost

Cc:No not at all let's eat (I didn't know what was going they were laughing looking at Jake ... Oh well it's family then we ate)

•

•

•

- Continuation -

•

(After dinner)

Me: Boss we need to talk

Him:About work oh I'm tired can we talk tomorrow? (Walking upstairs quickly)

Me:Boss(sad when will he tell me the truth then my phone rang)

•

Me: Hello

Sia:Why you sound down did Jake make you sad ohhh I squeeze his balls and shove them in his throat

Me:I don't think that's possible

Sia:Yah me2 but I can make it happen

Me:Yah right

Sia:So how did it go with your Boss

Me:No news ... Yet

Sia:Oh I'm sorry. .. you'll find something

Me:Thanks

Sia:Bye

Me:Bye

•

Lucy:Vee come look at this

Me:What? What's this

Her:Its our family memories

Me:oh its an album

Her:Yah look here My dad was still young

Me: Where is that place

Her:Oh that's a tattoo store he used to go there when he was young with his friends

Me:Oh is he still friends with them all?

Her:Some died I don't know why and how and my dad don't like talking about it either so...

Me:Oh some are alive right?

Her: Yah

Me:Where are they

Her:They have lives to live...why all these questions?

Me:Nothing sorry I was just curious

Her:OK and weird too

Me:Sorry ... Who's this little cutie oh his so cute ahhh look at his eyes ohw

Her:ewwww that's Jake when he was 10 months old

Me:Ohhh

(OK that was awkward then Lucy's Dad called her she went to him ... I look at the pictures alone they were so cute growing up )

Jake:Enjoying yourself

Me:(he sat next to me in the couch) Yah this is so cute

Jake:what's that?

Me:Your family memories

Him:Nooooooooo (he was shocked) give me that

Me:No no

Him:You have no idea what you are getting yourself into give it

Me: no Mr Noway

(We we're fighting he wanted the album to him I wanted it too)

Cc:What's going on here

Me:Miss...

Him:Mom...i...

Me:Uhhmm...Miss he was...

Him: No she...

Me:I didn't do anything (looking at him)

Him:Yes you did

Me:did not

Him:You did

Me:did not

Him:you did

Me:Did not

Him:you did

Me:did not

Him:you did

Me:did not

Cc:OK OK enough ... But stop fighting like two in love teenagers (she left)

Me:As if (I went to drink water)

•

Δ

Δ

Δ

•

Jake's POV

(See Siviwe is not interested in me at all I followed her)

Me: So who broke your heart?

Her: Excuse me?

Me: Who broke your heart?

Her: What do you mean?

Me: The way you are you don't let guys into your life as if you were don't wrong before

Her: yah I am broke I still am she broke my heart

Me: She???

Her: Yah she?

Me: Your...

Her: Lesbian yes I am

Me: What no your not

Her: Why do you care? (She left I went to Lucy's room)

•

Me: Lucy my beautiful and only sister in the world

Her: I am beautiful and the only sister you have and will ever have in your life what do you want (annoyed)

Me: OK I want you to do me s favor

Her: You want money I don't have it (annoyed)

Me: Hey I have my own money sister

Her: Really can you...

Me: No you can't... That's not why I'm here I'm here for you to interrogate Siviwe to see if she's a lesbian for real

Her: A what?

Me:I'm crc here

Her:No she's not a lesbian

Me:But she said it

Her:She told me about her last boyfriend

Me:For real (I thought to myself why did she lie to me?)

Her:Yah they broke up because he cheated on her

Me: Ohhh

Her:Why asking do you like her? Now that explains a lot

Me:Explains what?

Her:Whenever your around she feels at ease

Me: Really?

Her:Yes maybe he likes you too

Me:That's silly I'm going to sleep (I went to my room I got an SMS that I should be early at work tomorrow so I had to tell Siviwe to wake up early ... I went to her room I knocked but no answer I opened the door I didn't see her the bed was still made I don't get it where must she be I heard the shower I went close to the door It wasn't slitly closed I SAW HER IN THE SHOWER ... NAKED )

Me:Ohhh shit (I tripped and fell she came running to me with a towel on)

Her:Are you ok?

Me:Yes I am

Her: I'll get ice

Me:No I'm fine

Her:What were you doing here ever heard of knocking? Jeez

Me:I knocked million times

Her:Yah right

Me:I'm sorry

Her:Its OK you did see anything right?.

Me:Me no what will I see? no I saw nothing

Her:As if you we're gonna tell the truth

Me: What do you mean?

Her:You were outside my bathroom looking at me while I was in the shower . .right?

Me:What pshhh no

Her:You will never tell the truth ever in your entire life

- 
- 
- 

- Chapter 9 -

- 
- 
- 

(Its Friday I woke up as usual went to work ... Work was great then came back )

Me:Hello Martha

Her:Hey Miss...how was work?

Me:Ahhh good as usual...is anyone home

Her:Ava

Me:Ava?

Her:Jakes daughter

Me:Oh she's already here where is she I want to meet her

Her:At the pool

Me:OK thanks (I put my bag on the couch then went to the pool it was quiet hot )

Me:Heyyy

Her:Hello

Me:I'm the guest here Siviwe

Her:Ava Jakes daughter (we hand shake)

Me:So how...

Her:Look lady you don't know me please leave me alone

Me:OK I'm sorry (wow ok I left went to my room)

- 
- 
- 

(Sia called)

Sia:My friend

Me:What happened?

Sia:Lucas just called

Me: I won't have that tpc with you ... You didn't even tell me how did the date go

Sia: Fyn ... We talked that's all

Me:About?

Sia:Stuff and I slept with him(she said that so fast )

Me:What????????????(my jaws dropped)

Sia:I know I know I'm stupid but that guy makes my knees weak

Me:No your not stupid you love him

Sia:He has been calling me since then I ignore him

Me: Are crazy?

Sia:I don't know what to do

Me:Answer him of cause and fix things

Sia:Maybe

Me:This guy loves you Sia he is showing you that he still cares

Sia:I regret calling you

Me:Call the guy argue with me later

Sia:Fyn

(She dropped the call)

"I'm sorry about earlier"

Me:(I turned I saw Ava) oh come on in

Her: I'm sorry I was rude to you I was unfair

Me:Its ok let's start over

(We had chat it was fun she told me about school till late)

.

.

.

(Jake entered the room I stood up)

Me: Hy

Him:Hey

Ava: Daddy

Him:Sweetie (the hugged)

Ava:I missed you so much

Him:Me2 sweetheart

(Ava was even crying nchooo )

Martha:Sorry to interrupt but the dinner is ready

Me: We will be right there Martha thank you

(We went downstairs )

Me:Where's Lucy?

Zayn:She hasn't came back from school

Cc:Why? I'll have a talk with that young Lady

(She walked in)

Me:Lucy

Cc:Come here young Lady we need to have a talk

Me: Maybe I should talk with her

Ava: I think she needs to be left alone

Jake: Siviwe is good with her please go

Me: Ok

(I went to her I found her crying)

Me: What's wrong where were you ?

Her: I'm sorry (she hugged me) I didn't know he would take advantage of me (she broke down )

Me: Woah woah look at me Lucy what happened Why your uniform is ripped? Who did this?

Her: My boyfriend pls don't tell

Me: Are you crazy of cause I'll tell... Did he rape you?

Her: Vee?

Me: Did he? (I was so angry)

Her: Yes I didn't want too I know I didn't he forced himself on me

Me: Look don't take a bath don't clean yourself in anyway (I called the police)

Her: Don't he'll kill me

Me: Look Lucy no man will take advantage of young girls and do whatever they please he had no right to force you in anything you didn't want to do ok

Her: He's dangerous Vee his Father is powerful

Me: I don't give a damn Justice will be served

Her: Vee

(I went downstairs to tell everyone )

- 
- 
- 

To be continued...

- Continuation -

Me:Guys we need to talk

(They stood up looking worried )

Cc:What's wrong to my baby?

(We heard the door bell I rushed to the door)

Me:By pls come on in I called Martha take them to Lucy's room I'll be right there

Martha: Yes Miss

(They followed her)

Cc:What's going on here?

Jake:Siviwe talk for Goodness sake

Me:Pls don't feak out

Henry: I'm freaking out bcz you are not TALKING

Me:She was raped

(They dropped their jaws)

Cc:No my poor daughter (she ran to her room)

Me:Ma'am no she...(I ran to her we got in)

Cc:Sweetie I'm sorry (they hugged)

Her:No I'm sorry Mom

(The whole family came)

"I'm the doctor to examine her pls I don't want anyone here everybody leave I just want to be left alone with her"

(We all left we went downstairs I had my hand on my mouth I'm so scared)

Cc:What did she say to you?

Me:I saw her uniform ripped I asked why she said her boyfriend forced himself on her

Herny:Who is this boyfriend

Cc:Don't do anything let the police do their job

Henry:Who is he Siviwe?

Me:She didn't say

(We were panicking the doctor came to us)

Doc:I'm afraid she needs to go to the hospital with us

Jake:Was she raped

Doc:Yes sir that one is clear

Austin: Why she needs to go to the hospital?

Doc:To check if she didn't catch disease but will check pregnancy after few weeks we couldn't tell now

Cc:Oh my baby girl

Henry: Do everything you can Doc

Doc:Yes excuse me

(I went to the kitchen for some water)

•

Δ

•

Jake's POV

(I don't know how to feel right now )

Me:Are you OK sweetie?

Ava:Yes Dad

(I looked at Siviwe making her way to the kitchen looking sad Lucy was the only person she connected with in this house they were best friends she must be so sad and broken)

Ava:Go to her she needs you

Me:Who?(I acted confused)

Ava:Dad come on I see how you look at her

Me:(I smiled) no sweetie

Her:Daddy I'm fine go (pushing me ) you also need to be happy

Me:(I smiled) OK sweetie

•

Me: hy

Her:Hey

Me:Are you OK?

Her:No I saw the sadness in her eyes she looked broken and embarrassed

Me:It wasn't your fault

Her:Not her's either

Me:Of cause not

Her:I just want that bustard to be locked behind bars

Me:He will the doctors will find that out and she will press charges to him calm down

Her:How can I

•

Δ

Δ

Δ

•

Austin's POV

Me:What's with those two (we were looking at them far)

Ava:My Dad found love again that I'm sure

Zayn:yah totally

Ava:But we don't know if she's into him

Me: They are into each but I don't know what's stopping them

(They hugged)

Ava:Dad hugged her

Zayn:She responded anyway

Me: They are looking at each

Zayn: They are going to kiss for sure

(They kissed)

Us:Ahhhhhh(our eyes popped)

Me:What???

(Ava pulled us)

Her:Don't look again let's leave them alone

Austin:It was getting interesting

Her:No go to sleep

Zayn:Yah dude let's go

(We went to sleep)

•

Δ

Δ

Δ

•

- Chapter 9 -

•

(My phone rang its the next day already)

Sia:Morning sunshine

Me:Morning .. Know what let's meet for lunch today at mug and bean your treat

Her: That's unfair

Me:Its a shame but I got no penny

Her:Fine

Me:(Jake entered my room oh God I'm naked I slept naked last night) ahhh bye see yah

•

Jake:Hey

Me:Hey

Jake:We need to talk

Me:Yah totally

Jake>About the kiss ahhh it was a mistake

(What we kissed a long passionate kiss and he tells me IT WAS A MISTAKE ... WoW)

Me:Yah totally it was a MISTAKE ... Can you pls go I'm naked I need to take a bath

Him:Siviwe pls let's talk about this

Me:Get out Jake

Him:Siviwe...

Me: (I stood up I wrapped sheets around me I pushed him) Get out!!!

(Then he left ... How could he I went to take a bath after I went downstairs for some breakfast)

Austin: I saw u yesterday

Me:Well that's all over

(I left him hanging Zayn came to us with a friend)

Zayn:Family this is Lungelo Khanyile

(What!??Lungelo Khanyile) my friend from Paris he also lives near by isn't that cool (I really need to see if this Lungelo is the same Lungelo that I know ... I turned)

Lungelo: Siviwe?(shocked)

Me:Lungelo?(shocked)

Zayn: You know each other?

Me:Yes

Luu:Yes we used to go to the same school

Zayn:Wow isn't that a nice coincidence?

(We sat down and ate Jake came downstairs)

Henry:I'm going to the hospital later anyone wanna come?

Me:I'll go there later first I'm meeting up with Sia

Cc:I'll go

Ava: Me too Grandpa

Jake:I need to be somewhere too I'll go later

Zayn:I'll go later

(Then we ate Martha came with red roses to me)

Martha: Miss this came for you

Me:(taking them) WoW they are beautiful thanks Martha

Cc:Who's the lucky guy

Me:I don't know

Ava:I wonder who?

Me:They smell beautiful too (I killed 2 birds with one stone Jake and Lungelo ... Lungelo is my ex from high school I wonder who's this )

Ahhh I can't get enough of this smell

Ava:Oh let me smell them ...ohhhh I wish someone could give me flowers like that.

Me: You will one day

Jake: Eat Ava please its just flowers

Me:Not just any flowers they mean something

Jake: Oh pls Siviwe

Me:They mean something

Austin: (cleared his throat ) guys

(We ate then went to meet up with Sia I told her Lucy's story)

Her:oh poor doll

Me:Yah its so sad

Her:Let's go and meet her

(We went to the hospital we found everyone there)

Me:How is she ?

Cc:she's doing very well she didn't catch any disease she'll be discharged soon

Me:Great...I'm going to get something to drink want some

Cc:No thanks

(I went to get some water I poured water on to the cup then Jake came to me)

Me:Ahhh can't this day get any worse

Him:Look I'm sorry

Me:leave me alone Jake

Him:He held my hand (Pls listen)

Me:Look the kiss forget about it like you said IT WAS A MISTAKE (I pulled my hand and walked away)

•

•

•

To be continued...

- Continuation -

•

(Henry came with Lucy we hugged her)

Lucy:Hey Ava

Ava:Hey Lucy

Lucy:I want you to tell me all about Boarding School when we got home OK?

Ava:There's nothing to tell

(Then we went home I took Lucy to her room)

Me:Did you talk to the police?

Her:Yes I did I told them everything

Me: Good he'll pay for what he did to you

Her: I'm just scared...this with back fire

Me: No it won't just rest if you need anything I'll be here you know I love you

Her: I love you too thanks for everything

Me: Don't mention it

(Jake entered)

Me: I better go I can't breathe the same air as other ppl

Her: huh? (I left)

•

Δ

Δ

Δ

•

Jake's POV

•

Lucy: And then?

Me: What?

Lucy: What did you do to her?

Me: Why is it gonna be me?

Lucy: Bcz Siviwe is a good girl

Me: I'm the bad one

Lucy: Yes you are now talk

Me: We kissed yesterday today I told her it was a mistake

Lucy: What? Do you know how much that hurts kissing a girl that likes you and tell her it was a mistake ... Dude may God be with you and may she forgive you

Me: I don't know what to do now .. I shouldn't have kissed her at the first place

Lucy: Talk to her tell her how you feel

Me: you think that will solve everything?

Lucy: I know so

Me: I can't believe I'm taking an advised from a 16 year old

Lucy: just go

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

- 

(I was at the lounge when I heard the door bell I went to open the door)

Me:Hy

Him:Hy...is Lucy home?

Me: Yah come on in

Him:I'm Jaden her friend from School

Me:Oh she's in her room let me walk you ... So you heard about what happened

Him:Yah my brother is a jerk

Me:The man that raped her is your brother?

Him:My older brother I'm really sorry

Me:It's OK its not your fault ... Go in

(We bumped into Jake)

Jaden:Hy Sir

Jake:You are?

Jaden: A friend from school Jaden

Jake:OK go in

(This guy is so sweet he brought Lucy flowers,chocolate and a Teddy who does that in nowadays the minute that boy entered Lucy's room I walk away)

Jake:Pls wait I need to tell you something

Me: Say it and really quick pls

Jake: I...I...I

Me: You...you what Jake know what forget it (I turned)

Him: (He pulled me closer to him our faces were facing each other) look its not easy for me to say this (we looked at each other we were outside Lucy's room we were at the passage) I love you ok? I said it I LOVE YOU (he said that a bit louder)

Me: Shhh do you want to be heard (my heart was beating so fast like it will leave my chest) I don't know what to say Jake

Him: Words can't describe the way we feel for each other but actions can

Me: Jake not here ( we kissed its was like a kiss the movies so slow and passionate God knows what was going through his head but I could tell by the way he kissed me our minds were thinking alike)

Him: Now that was uhmmm

Me: Magic

Him: You got that right (we were breathing heavily) I'm sorry about what I said earlier

Me: Its OK your forgiven

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: Yes she said it

Me: Yes I said it...but what will your parents say...I don't think this is a good idea

Him: We can keep it our little secret till we get the right time to drop the BOMB!!!

Me: OK

(He packed my lips Damn I bite my lip this guy ... Oh no Sia she'll make a big deal out of this I'm dead)

- 
- 
- 

Lucy's POV

(I was starting to relax my body when Jaden came in with flowers, big teddy and a box of chocolate oh he's so sweet)

Him:Hey (he's voice ahhh )

Me:Hey

Him:How are you doing?

Me:Fine(ahhh he cares)

Him:These are for you

Me:Ohw you shouldn't have

Him:,Trust me I had too ... What my Brother did to you is unforgivable I'm really sorry

Me:Its OK its not your fault

Him:Of cause it is

(He sat next to me now we were facing each other )

Him:Its my fault bcz I wasn't there to protect you ... Its my fault bcz I didn't warn you about him. . its my fault not to tell you how I felt about you at first ... Lucy I love you I loved you for as long as I could remember (he loves me Noway I'm dreaming) I'm sorry I really am (he pulled my hair behind my air) I wasn't there I know but I'm hear now in front of you declaring my love to you (he reached for a kiss I reached for a kiss too then BOOM!!! Ava came in running)

Ava:Oh sorry oh I'm so sorry (he left we just laughed )

Him:I'm sorry

Me:Yah its OK

Him:Get better soon we miss you us your friends

Me:I will I miss you guys as well

(He left)

- 
- 
- 

Unknown

(Hy my name is Carlos Jaden's Dad and Sam's Dad I just heard that my son is wrongfully

accused of rape there's Noway my son is going to jail I'll do whatever it takes)

Me:Where's Jaden? Jaden?

Him: Dad?

Me: Where have you been?

Him: At a friends place Dad

Me:And Sam?

Him:I don't

Me:He better explain to me this rape thing

Sam:Hey family

Me:Look who decided to show up what's this?(I throwed the papers on his face) Tomorrow you are going to be asked questions

Sam:Oh pls Dad she was a slut

Jaden:Don't call her that she was innocent

Sam:I dated her bcz I knew you liked her anyway I never loved her

Me:So you won't go to jail you'll say she also wanted too

Jaden:You both sick how could you be so cruel

Sam: Little Bro she's a slut

Jaden:shut up shut up you don't know her ... I don't know what she saw in you anyway

Sam:just except it already she first slept with me now no man will ever get close to her bcz she was traumatized (he laughed) not even you Brother you took a while to make a move on her but u jumped right in then BAM I fucked your little girlfriend (he laughed)

.

.

.

- Chapter 10 -

.

.

•

(Its been weeks now police are still onto Lucy's case but its hard to arrest Sam because they were a couple so they can't tell that he raped her but for me all that is needed is a confession from that Sam guy but I don't know how can I get it ... I'm at work with Sia)

•

Sia:So can we go out tomorrow since it's Saturday?

Me:Ahhhh I can't sorry girlfriend

Sia:You never ever turned down my offer what is it?

Me:I ahhh (faking a laughter)I'm going with someone

Sia:With Make?

Me:Yes

Sia:I'm starting to become jealous you know

Me:You and Lucas are official why don't you see him?

Sia:No he has a meeting

Me:I'm sorry girlfriend

Sia:Nahhh its cool... have fun I remember you not wanting to even see Jake

Me:Shut up

Sia:I'll shut up

•

•

•

Henry's POV

•

Me:Find everything you can about this Sam boy and I mean everything you can I can pay double price for all I care do you hear me?

Caller: Yes Sir I promise I won't disappoint

Me:Good (I dropped the call that boy thinks I'll believe his little confession well he better think again my daughter will never lie about something like that ... He got no idea who is he

dealing with)

- 
- 
- 

Narrated

- 

(So I can update you on the story so far Siviwe is dating Jake ... Sia is dating Lucas his ex boyfriend ... Ava is staying with us now she goes to school with Lucy Ava is doing fine so far at her new school Lucy is not at ease at school at all kids at school are making rumours about her being a slut saying she deserved everything that happened to her ... Henry is wanting information on Sam he want to know who is he ... Zayn and Lungelo spend more time out Zayn doesn't stay home lately ... And as for the business ...the business is going very well

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

(Now I'm at home Jake also showed up)

Him:My beautiful Queen

Me:Hmmm hey (we baby kissed) ppl will see us

Him:I'm sorry

(Then we were interrupted by a bell on the door I went to open it was an old man but not that old maybe he was in his 40's)

Him:Well well well Henry didn't tell me he has a beautiful guest

Me:Hy Sir come on in

Him:Let me introduce myself I'm Miguel Reyes

Me:I'm Siviwe Phola

Him:(he kissed my hand) nice to meet you

Me:Oh (I faked a smile) oh your so nice Sir

Him:Pls call me Miguel

Jake:She'll call you Sir or Mr Reyes right Siviwe

Me:(Lord have mercy on me what am I going to do) I....I'll call you Mr Miguel I'm very formal ...  
Mr (I faked a smile)

(My Boss Henry walked in)

Henry: Hey Miguel your already here

Mr.Reyes:Hey Partner

(Partner??? OMG )

Mr.Reyes:I would like this girl to be one of our Models she got a great amazing body (he said  
that checking me out)

Jake:What that's absurd Dad come on

Henry: Son we'll hear what she says

(Me???oh God what am I going to say this Gentleman is offering me a good job but I want to do  
hair that's my dream but this is huge being a model ahhh I never dreamt of being on TV but  
on the other hand there's Jake who doesn't like this)

Me:I....uhmmm can I think about it? I mean this is a big deal and besides I'm doing great on my  
job

Henry: It's OK Siviwe its fine

Me:I'll think about it. ..excuse me

(I went upstairs to my room Jake entered behind me)

Him:What was that?

Me:What?

Him:You can't be a model

(We were arguing)

Me:What? Am I not good enough am I ugly? Huh?

Him: I didn't say that U R NOT DOING MODELING OK?

Me:Are you jealous?

Him:(He calmed down) me? Jealous pshhh please

Me: your jealous OMG

Him:I'm not

(I got closer to him)

Me:Yes you are and you look super cute when your jealous

Him: No girlfriend of mine will be taken pics naked

Me:I won't be naked ...OK maybe a little....come on babe I'll be Famous

Him:Fine then ... If any man come close to you I'll squeeze his balls

Me:Your so jealous

Him:Yes I am and so much ...and I wish I could take those pictures (he grabbed my waist and pulled me close to him)

Me:Hmmm its a pity

Him:(we kissed)

- 
- 
- 

Ava's POV

Me:Lets go to Siviwe I'm so bored Lucy

Lucy:Yah let's go

(Now we got in we didn't knock we found Siviwe and Jake kissing)

Me:(shocked ) uhmmm I'm so sorry

Lucy:Ohw sorry

Siviwe:(She pushed Jake away) we were uhmmm nothing was going on

Jake:Yes uhmmm she had something in her eye

Siviwe:I'm fine now thank you

Us:(we laughed at their little play )

Me:You guys are terrible at acting

Lucy: totally

Jake: We not

Me: Oh yeah right ... Let's leave them Lucy

(We left)

- 
- 
- 

To be continued

- Continuation -

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

(When Lucy and Ava left we were shocked but we knew they won't tell)

Me: wow

Him: Next time we'll lock

Me: Totally

(My phone rang)

Him: pls don't get it

Me: Its an unknown

Him: Pls don't get it I don't spend much time with you

(He did puppy eyes)

Me: No

(He kissed my neck )

Me: No it tickles (answering the phone) Hello

Caller: Hey its me Lungelo

Me:Lungelo??? (I walked away from Jake to answer him)

Me:Lungelo uhmm hy

Him:Hey I didn't get a chance to talk to you these past few days can we meet up and talk

Me:Uhm I don't know I'm so busy I can't

Him:Please

Me:I can't

(I dropped the call)

Jake: And then?

Me: I need to be alone

Jake:What? Who was that?

Me:Please go Jake

Jake:Babe if there's something bothering....

Me:Just leave Jake

Jake: (he looked sad) OK

.

.

.

Jaden's POV

Me:Hey Dad

Dad:Hey

Me: Where's Sam?

Dad:I don't know

Me:Oh

Dad:Why do you ask

Me:Nothing

(I went to his room I found his laptop on I didn't hesitate to pick in ... What I saw I couldn't

believe my eyes i bet they were lying to me I saw many videos of girls Sam slept with so he video rise every women he sleeps with other women in here don't look so happy at all then I heard him greeting Dad I closed it)

Him:oh your here hey

Me: Hey I'm here for you to confess what you did to Lucy

Him:Are you insane?

Me: Brother you are ruining her life her future she will be traumatized for the rest of her life

Him:Jaden get out of here I'm not a rapist

Me:You are you disgust me

(I left .. So I need to get those videos I can risk my life for Lucy I owe it to her)

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

(Its morning I felt bad about what I said to Jake I thought I should go and apologise)

- 

(I went to his room I didn't see him I bet he was on the shower I closed the door I locked it this time around ... I stayed there a bit I explored the room ahhh it smelled like him oh God)

"Hy"

Me:(I turned I had the shock of my life)uhmmm hy

Him:What do you want?

(He just got out of the shower water is still running on his abs )

Me:Hey uhmmm

Him:Talk I got a long day.

Me:Uhmmm I ... I'm sorry about what I said it wasn't fair I'm really sorry

Him:I'll forgive you under one condition

Me:I'll do it I promise I'll do it

Him:Come here

Me:What? (He was insane hot) No noway

Him:What your scared? (He got close to me)

Me:Me? Sacred oh no

Him:Then come close to me

Me:No Jake

Him:Then you don't want my forgiveness

Me:Fine fine ... (I went to him) see? See? I did then what?

Him:Kiss me (I couldn't resist he was smoking hot now I was closer to him I felt my knees collapsing )

Me: (I kissed him he kissed me back we took it slow he's hands were on my waist mine were on his back our lips were moving the same rhythm it's like I know what kind if kisses he liked and he knows what kisses I like were never kissed like that before it was something else I was on clouds then it started to hit up he started to hit up I was hitting up he laid me on his bed I was feeling the moment he was on top of me our bodies were connecting very well then I pulled out the kiss)

Him:Oh no no no you are not leaving me like this?

Me:Babe I'm so sorry it's just I want my first time to be....

Him:Wait what?

Me:Its OK if you don't want to be with me now since I'm a virgin its OK

Him: What? I'll be a fool letting you go the fool that treated you like nothing the day I first saw you ... Babe being your first will do me the honour but being your last is what counts ... I want to be the last man you be with

Me:Really?(I smiled it was so beautiful when he said it)

Him: Of cause I do love you alot and I promise you your first time will be unexpected and magical

Me:Oh pls your no romantic

Him:You can change me

Me:Maybe

Him:Now please kiss me to forget about everything bcz I need that

(We kissed again he started brushing my thighs I was wearing a red short tight dress with brown shiny heels that got red bottoms and my dress got a zip at the back he unzipped my back slowly remember he had nothing on other than his towel on so I could feel his dick print I didn't mind that but he pulled out)

Him:Damn your driving me crazy (he stood up he had he's hands on his head)

Me:What happened?(shocked)

Him:Its just your driving me insane (he kissed me again) Ahhh I can't get enough of you look what you did

Me: Come on just a little tiny...

Him: Its not little

Me: I didn't say that

Him:And not tiny either

Me:No babe its huge (popping my eyes out) its huge huge

Him:That's more like it ( he picked me up and carried me)

Me:Too huge that I couldn't take it all

Him:(he put me down) what no no

Me:Yah its too much for me

Him:Come on I'll be gentle

Me:I want you to be loving,caring,gentle, I want our hearts to beat the same rhythm I want us too feel each other I want us to make love not sex I want you to make love to me so we can both enjoy

Him:This talk is making he harder

Me:(I stood up) Too bad I'm going

Him: Wait what your going?

Me:Yes ... Besides what we just talked about will not happen now or today or tomorrow nor the day after tomorrow so you need to chill

Him:Siviwe did you see me?

Me:No I didn't and I don't wish too bcz its too huge

Him:Not funny

Me: Bye

(I left I bumped into Austin)

Him:Morning

Me:Morning

Him:oh you got lipstick on your face

Me:Oh (wiping my face) oh God would you look at that I don't even know how that got there (I faked a laughter)

Him: Yah is brother awake?

Me:Huh?

Him: Is brother awake?

Me:Why asking me?

Him:Bcz you are coming from his room

Me:how can you tell?

Him:Nothing (he left I wonder what does he know Oh God)

•

•

Jake's POV

(I wonder what is she doing to me I never felt like this ever since Ava's Mom left us ... But what just happened is way more it would be double if we made love but we'll take baby steps I'm willing to wait as long as she wants then Austin entered my room while i was in these deep thoughts)

Him:Hey Man

Me:Hey

Him: Your comfortable

Me:Yeah why wouldn't I?

Him: Bcz Siviwe just came out of your room bro

Me:Pshhh so?

Him: So? Your wearing that and she was here and I found you laying on your bed comfortable and you got lipstick on your lips

Me:I do (I tried making up excuses but he didn't believe me)

Him:Were you banging her?

Me: What no

Him: That girl is dazzling hot I wouldn't blame you ...

Me:Just shut up Austin

Him:OK fine are you guys dating?

Me:No jeez just get out

(I kicked him out that guy is a headache I swear)

- Chapter 11 -

•

•

•

Siviwe's POV

•

(I fixed myself then went to eat breakfast I found them all seated together they look so happy I want to have a family like this one day)

Me:Morning everyone

Them:Morning

Henry:So did you think about what Miguel offered you?

Me:Yah

Henry: So?

Me:Yes I'll do modeling

Cc:What modeling wow girl

Lucy:Really you'll be famous now

Ava:Well congrats

Austin:If you were my girl I would never let you do that wouldn't you Jake?

Jake:(choked by his drink)

Me:Come on Austin its not that bad

Austin:You will be naked

Me: Not completely besides I'm not with someone

Austin:Whatever you say

Henry: Why I'm the only one left in this table?

Cc:I'm lost too my love

Me:Lonto awukwazi uvala lomlomo wakho

Austin:Translate that pls

Me:Nothing

Henry: OK let's eat pls

(We ate oh Austin is ruining this oh God this Guy...since today it's not work day I'll visit Sia I miss her I should call her first)

Me:Girlfriend

Sia:Hey (she said that in a low tone)

Me:What's wrong?Look I'm coming over

Sia:No no no

Me:Why are you whispering?

Sia:I...uhmmm with Lucas

Me:Why didn't you say so OK I won't come ..Bye

Sia:Bye

(I dropped the call)

Ava:Come with us to the mall

Lucy: Yes pls were going for shopping

Me: Since I'll be bored here why not

(Then I got a text from Jake {I still want to see you for dinner tonight} I replied with {I won't miss it for the world})

Lucy: Why are you blushing?

Me:No I wasn't let's go

(We went to the mall they bought things for school then we went to a restaurant there)

Ava:Siviwe I'm going to ask you something I want you to be 100% 100% sencere with me

Me:Of cause ask anything

Ava:Are you dating my father

Me:Ava what kind of a question is that

Ava:please answer?

Lucy:Pls Vee

Me:(I saw Lungelo walking towards our table)

Him:Hey ladies

Them:Hey

Him:Can I talk to Siviwe for a moment

Them:Sure

(They went to the ladies room)

Him:Its so nice to see you again you know

Me:I'm not so thrilled

Him:I love you Siviwe pls give me another chance

Me:Another chance my foot you cheated on me many times in a row with the same girl you are nothing but a bustard...and when I confronted you about it you denied it then you left me after that

Him:Hurting you wasn't my intention

Me:What were intentions with me Lungelo? Huh? (I was grieving with anger)

Him:Vee pls

Me:Niggar you are really testing my patients

Him:pls find it in your heart to forgive me ... I'm leaving tomorrow to Paris

Me: Well would you hear that .. Go then Lungelo andikudingi run away like you used to

Him:Siviwe I can...

Me:Hamba phambi kwam Lungelo or I'll make a huge scene

Him:Please

Me:I gave you everything Luu everything I had I trusted you with everything I had I gave you my love my body my innocence

Him:I'm really sorry

Me:Get out of my site

(He left Ava and Lucy came to me)

Lucy:Are you ok?

Me:Yah ... Let's go now

(We went to the car)

Ava:What's with you and that Lungelo guy

Me:(I told them the whole story)

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

(Eric entered my office)

Him:Bro

Me:Yah man (we bro hugged)

Him:I feel like eating some pussy tonight what about you?

Me:Nahhh man I'll be busy

Him:With what come on Dude

Me:I'm going out for dinner

Him:(he laughed at me) What with who?

Me:Ahhh (I smiled)

Him:Don't tell me a love bug bittern you AGAIN

Me:Actually it did and this time for good

Him:Oh Jesus ... Do I know her?

Me:No you don't

Him:introduce me to her already I want to see her dude

Me:All in due time my family doesnt even know about us

Him:Wow OK ... Is he well built

Me:She's black what do you think

Him: Black???

Me:Yah what's wrong to that?

Him: Nothing but don't cheat on her or you'll be digging your own grave

Me:That woman got everything I need in a woman she's the woman I want to have a life with

Him: Ewww dude you are seriously head over heels with this woman

Me:Dude even Ava likes her

Him:Well maybe it is a good sign ... What about Ava's Mom?

Me: I got nothing to do with her she left us

Him:True but I want you to be happy dude OK?

Me:Thanks Dude

•

•

•

Siviwe POV

(We arrived at home)

Ava:I'm really sorry about everything

Me:Its OK

(My phone rang)

Me:Hello

Caller:Is this Miss Phola?

Me:Yes indeed

Caller:We would like if you could come to our office at Monday you have been collected to be one of our models congratulations

Me:OMG for real

Caller:Yes Ma'am

Me:Thank you (she dropped the call I was jumping and screaming bcz of excitement)

Lucy:Girl what's up?

Me: I'm going to the modeling agency Monday

(Ava&Lucy screamed too)

Me:I'm so happy (we grouped hugged then I went to my room after a while Jake walked in and closed the door)

Him:I heard the news babe

Me: Babe (I ran to him and wrapped my legs around his waist and hugged him tight )

Him:I'm so happy for you sweet heart

Me:Thanks babe (we let go of the huh) I can't wait (he kissed me )

Him:So what are you wearing on your first photoshoot?

Me:(Going through my phone)they said they'll show me a minute ago I wanted to see it too ...here they are my first outfits(we both looked at them)

Him:What's that?

Me:What?

Him:is that a bra and a...

Me:Babe come on

Him:Ahhh Noway I never even seen you naked now random guys will

Me:Babe come on its not like they touch me (biting my lip I sat on his laps I faced him)

Him:No don't do this ..I'll be there

Me:What no ppl will suspect something

Him:But this is unfair

Me:Do you want to see me naked?

Him:I want too so bad but...

Me: But nothing (I kissed him)

Him: No no not this time around you will leave me like ...

Me:I won't just kiss me

(We started kissing I unbuttoned his blazer then unbuttoned he's shirt he unzipped my back slowly I said to myself maybe this is it ... He pulled out)

Me:What?

Him:No I don't want to feel like I'm rushing you

Me:Your not ok? I want too

Him:OK

(We carried were we left off then he took of my dress I wasn't wearing any bra and my breast are still round my chest was on his then he kissed my neck then he went down to my tits I started to feel pressure between my thighs I started to moarn in pleasure he turned and laid me on the bed I started to tear shits up I took off he's belt then his trousers he was left with his boxers only I was left with my black panties my legs are wrapped around his waist he is covering my body with kisses we kissed like it was the last time we kept on kissing over and over he whispered in my ear)

Him:I love you

Me:(I mourned out) I love you more

Him:But not today Vee not now

Me:(We stopped I looked at him) its fine its OK

Him:But I want you though so bad but I want us to be both free

Me:So what did you think?

Him: What do I think? Babe I loved it I can't imagine if I would make love to you

Me:Ohw I love you (we kissed)

•

•

•

To be continued...

- Continuation -

•

•

•

(Its Monday already so its my first day at my photoshoot)

Jake:Let's go

Me:Wait what? Are you serious?

Him:Yes

Me:But???

Him:GET IN THE CAR

Me:OK

(Wow I got in we arrived there)

Mr.Miguel:Come on in go to door number 12 that's where you'll be taken pictures

Me:Thanks Sir

(We got in room 12 a lady walked to us)

Her:Want to take a shower first?

Me:Sure

(I left Jake there i went to take a shower then I was done)

Her:Good now wear this first

Me:Sure

Her:Are you sure since the are many guys out there and since its your first time

Me: No I'll be fine

Her:OK go

(I would be lying to myself if I would say I wasn't scared I was shaking ... I had a gown on ... The camera man saw me)

Him:Come this way (I saw Jake from far he was smiling at me and lifting thumbs he's so supportive)

Him:Ma'am let me help with with the gown (he took it off I was wearing grey lace bra with grey lace panties and I had a little curly afro)

Him:Go there miss

(He showed me poses then I changed into other outfits it was a lot of fun although I was a but nervous but I got used to it ... Now I was done shooting then I left)

Me: I can't believe you waited for me wasn't that boring?

Him:It was a little but looking at you isn't boring for me at all

Me:ohwww

Him:Besides I wanted to stay a bit longer?

Me:Why's that?

Him:I wanted to see other models

Me:Wow really why didn't you then I mean there were a lot of beautiful models there

Him:I'm kidding

Me: I'm not

Him:Are you mad at me now?

Me:No why would i?

Him:Your so freakin jealous

Me:Oh pls you wish

Him:Aren't u hungry

Me:yesss

Him:Me2 but I'm craving for French fries and Burger you?

Me:I'll get what you get ... I'm going to the ladies room pls if my phone rings answer it OK?

Him:Sure

(I went to the loo)

•

(I got back I found Jake pissed)

Me:Look I took too long I know I'm sorry

Him:Lungelo huh?

Me:(oh shit!!!) What?

Him:You have slept with Lungelo before?

Me:Babe I was...

Him:I don't want to hear it let's go home

(We got in the car it was pretty tense no one said a word to anyone)

Me:I'm sorry I was going to tell you its just we were not official at that time and we were in a fight

Him:How about the day you said u were a virgin to me

Me:Bcz I regret what I did and if I could turn back time I would I'm really sorry ...

Him:But how could you?

Me:I'm really sorry ok( my eyes were teary)

Him:Ok don't cry

Me:I even disgust myself

Him:He said he still loves you

Me:I already made it clear to him I don't want to even look at him he makes me sick

Him:If you want me to forgive you tell me what happened

Me:Fine me and Lungelo we were high school sweethearts in Grade 9 we were at the same class...we were dating after a month he asked me if I could visit him ..I agreed didn't know that he's planing to sleep with me ... After a while I was there he said if I love him I must show it buy sleeping with him ...I was so stupid and naive I didn't see what was happening ... We slept together then he never talked to me ever again he only gave me nasty stairs then I heard rumours that he was with someone else I confronted him about it he didn't even hesitate to lie on my face he said "yes I am" I said "its over between us" then the next day at school I never saw

him ... He left ... But I don't blame him I also blame myself ... He manipulated me and I let him

Him: I'm sorry that was hard for you

Me: Very

Him: So you never. Been with anyone else since then?

Me: Yes

Him: Wow

(Were got in the house)

- 
- 
- 

Lucy: Vee your back?

Me: Yes hello

Ava: Vee

(We grouped hugged)

Me: I need to rest ok

(I left )

- 
- 
- 

(Then it was dinner for time)

Cc: How was your first day?

Me: Great

Cc: See any boys?(she gave me a nasty stare)

Me: (I laughed embarrassed) ahhh no Ma'am

Cc: Hmmmm(she gave me a nasty smile this woman is something else)

Lucy: Mom you are embarrassing her

Cc:Fine

(We ate I got a phone call)

Me:I'm sorry I got to get this( it was Sia)

Me:Girl

Sia:How did it go?

Me:Great girl thanks for asking

Sia:I'll pick up tomorrow I want to see this Model agency

Me:Sure

(We dropped the call... Then it was time for bed I went to bed I slept like a baby till the next morning ... I did my hygiene process then wore my black tight skirt with a white shirt and black block heels let my mini curled afro lose)

Me:Morning Martha

Her:Morning Miss

Me:My room is clean don't bother

Her:I already know

(We heard Ava screaming you could swear she was being strangled we went rushing to her)

Me:What?

Ava:You are on the front page

Me:Me? What? Let me see

(I took it)

Me:OMG I'm on the front page wow I'm speechless

Lucy:You look gorgeous

Me:Thank you I already have all the pictures though

Lucy: Congrats girl

(My phone rang it was Sia)

Sia:(she screamed on my ear) Girl your on front page

Me:Isn't that amazing?

Sia:Are you kidding its beyond amazing look at you (then she whispered) did Mr Jake saw this

Me:(I went somewhere private) Ahhh no not yet

Sia:Ok but you are hot if I may say

Me:Thanks

Martha:Breakfast is ready Miss

Me:Thanks Martha

(I went to sit down)

Ava:Here is our model to tell the truth you look stunning

Zayn:We also wanna see

Jake:Just eat Zayn

Zayn: Come on dude

Austin:I wanna see too

Henry:Boys eat or you'll be late

(We ate then everybody went to work girls went to school)

.

.

.

Ava's POV

(We are at school)

Me:Oh here comes your boyfriend

Lucy:He's not he's just being friendly

Me:Don't put a guy on a friend zone he likes you can't you see

Him:Hey ladies

Us:Hey

Him:There's something I need to tell you guys

Lucy:Go ahead

Him:Sam got everything on camera

Ava:What everything?

Him:He recorded everything that night including when he forced himself on you

Lucy:he's a sick bastard no offence Jaden

Him:Nahhh he is sick

Me:So got the video?

Him:No I don't have it I don't know how can I get it

Me:We should come up with a plan though

Him:Yah

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

(At work we are having a meeting)

Boss:OK ladies next week we have a big show here I want everyone to be there no one must be sick because I want everyone on their well health NO EXCUSESES or its the end of your career we work with time here ok ... You can go

(Wow ok so we are going to have a show I can't wait then I bumped into a young guy)

Him:(looking down)Hey watch where you going lady

Me:I should watch where I'm going but it was you who bumped me plus your busy with your phone

(He up lifted his head)

Him:Oh hey (he smiled)

Me:Do I know you?

Him:I don't think so ... But we can get to know each other (he was checking me out I was going for a photoshoot I was wearing a red lingerie I didn't tie my gown)

Me: Not in million years (I walked away)

Him:(He bit his lips) Hmmm

(Idiot but he's face looks Familiar Hmmm)

•

•

•

- Chapter 12 -

•

•

•

(Work was really great now I'm at the house)

Me:Hey Martha

Martha: Hey Miss

(I went up stairs I over heard Henry on the phone I'm sorry but I ears dropped he was saying)

Him:Look my past is hunting me

Caller:...

Him: This can't be happening ... I found Sophia

Caller:...

Him: I'll protect her with everything I have I owe her father that much

Caller:...

Him:I want you to find if those men are still alive ok

Caller:..

Him:Thanks ..sure

(He dropped the call .. Who is Sophia? I wonder ... I acted like I didn't hear him)

Me:Hey Sir

Him:Hey how was work today?

Me:Awesome

Him:Good to know if you want anything tell me ok?

Me:Sure

(He went downstairs I went to my room I took a nap after a while I woke up but I was woken up by a male voice I over heard Jake on the phone .. This Dude is in my room wow ... I pretended like I was asleep)

Him:Dude I told you I quit clubs

Caller:...

Him:Bye man I'm not coming I told you

Caller:...

Him:Look I gotta go man ... Have fun

(He dropped the call ... Wow I can't believe he turned down going to the club maybe he got work)

•

(He set on the bed and brushed my hair)

Him:I rather spend the whole night with you ...watching you sleep than going to the club ... Arggg you drive me insane I can't even focus on work what are you doing to me? Your so beautiful (then he stopped talking)

Me:Don't stop you were doing fine (in a sleepy voice)

Him:You where awake this whole time?

Me:Yes(I giggled)

Him:Open your eyes (he laughed )

(I opened them)

Him:There we go (he brushed my face smiling) your so beautiful when your asleep,awake in every way

Me:(I was smiling ear to ear I didn't know what to say)

Him:Can I sing few lines for you?

Me: ( I laughed) sure I would love it

Him:when I see your face ... (OMG he sings horrible but still cute ) there's not a thing that I would change coz your amazing just the way you are

Me:You sing horrible but I loved it u sang one of my favourite songs

Him:I know I sing horrible

Me:But still cute

(He kissed my forehead then we cuddled after a while we heard a knock at the door)

Me:oh shit

Him:Ask who's it?

Me:who's it?

"Its me Cecilia"

Me:Oh no hide at the bathroom

(He hid there I went to open)

Her: Oh you were asleep

Me:Yah

Her:I need to talk to you about something

Me:Sure come in take a sit please

(We sat down)

Her:Its about my son

Me:Oh(confused)

Her: Jake

Me:Ohw(surprised)

Her: Look he hasn't been with anyone else since Ava's Mom left them he really loved her I could see it in he's eyes ... But my point is I see that spark again when your around him I could feel he get lighten up when he See's you he got a little crush on you I'm saying this bcz I see the something to you ... Is there something your not telling us?

Me:Ma'am I'm....uhmmm

Her:Its ok but you have to come clean anytime soon

Me:There's nothing Ma'am nothing at all

Her:Its ok but for now ... Excuse me

(She left I locked the door on her way out then Jake came out)

Me:You have a crush on me?( I laughed so hard)

Him: Haha very funny

Me:I'm sorry but its so funny

Him: That's not true

Me:(Getting close to him with a nasty smile) Oh is that right don't your eyes spark when I walk in the room?

Him:No(annoyed)

Me:Don't I make your heart beat skip fast when I touch you?

Him:No

Me:Your Mom said that not me

Him:I don't know what's her problem

Me: Me too she's scaring me what if she find's out?

Him:I would be glad I'm tired of the lies already

Me:But babe

Him:Let's come clean babe I love you

Me:Sure but till the situation with Lucy comes down

Him:Ok

(We cuddled then slept)

- 
- 
- 

- Continuation -

- 
- 
- 

(At the dinner table it was so quiet)

Me:What's with the silence?

Lucy:I don't know

(My phone rang)

Me:Sorry I gotta get this (I went to the kitchen)

Me:Hello

Caller: This is the landlord of the apartment you wanted

Me:Serious

Caller: Yes your apartment is ready you can move in anytime

Me:Thank you Sir (I was so happy then I went to the table)

Ava: What happened?

Me:I got a new apartment

(They all look down)

Me: What?

Lucy:Your leaving

Me:Well I was going to leave anything soon

Ava:Pls don't go Daddy pls beg her not to go

Jake: Me? Ahhh well uhmmm...

Cc:Come on Vee stay

Henry:Yah pls your part of the Family now and you can stop pretending

Me:Pretending?

Henry:About you and Jake I know you like each other besides you'll be closer to him here

Me:Ahhh

Jake:(his eyes were popped out)

Cc:Yes we all knew

Jake: Yes we are dating and I love this woman with every strength in my body

Austin: ohwww that's cute can we eat now?

Zayn: Stop being jealous Austin stick with your gold digger

Austin: She's not

Henry: Anyhow pls stay

Lucy:Yah Vee

Ava:Yes pls

Me:Uhm mmm...

Cc:Please

Me:Sure why not

Lucy:Yes

Ava:Thank you

(Then we ate )

Zayn:I have to announce something too

Cc:Go ahead

Zayn:Im leaving tomorrow

Henry:Have a safe trip

Ava:Bye

Lucy:Yah peace

Zayn:Yah

Me: Stop being cold ladies      Why are you leaving Zayn

Zayn:I got a new job at Paris

Me:Oh that's great

(Then after sometime we went to sleep...I got in my room I took off my clothes went to the shower ... While showering I was thinking about my Mom and my Dad even though I never saw him but he got a huge space in my heart ... Then I thought about what Henry said on the phone oh who's Sophia why he has to protect her)

- Chapter 13 -

•

- 
- 

(Its Saturday I woke up I was in my pjs I got an SMS I looked at it with sleepy eyes it said I got money from my model agency I thought it was a mistake I called their receptionist)

Me:Hello uhmmm you guys...

Her:You got your money

Me:Yah what is it for?

Her:My boss asked me too

Me: What? Why?

Her:I don't know Ma'am

Me:Its too much its more than 3 times I made in my last job

Her:Have a nice day Ma'am

Me:No don't ...(she hung up) hello... hello ...she hung up on me WOW ... So much money I don't want it I'll give it back to him ... I went to take a shower then went downstairs)

Cc:Here she comes

(I wanted to go out straight but they called me)

Ava:Come sit down what's the rush?

Me:Ahhh nothing its just I ... Nothing forget it let's eat

Lucy: Hey Family I have a banging headache

Me:Sorry sweetie drink water

Lucy:Ok

(We heard a door bell)

Me:I'll get it

(It was Kevin ... Kevin is my male friend from the model agency he's a young model he's 18)

Me:Heyyy

Him:Hy

(We hugged)

Me: Come in for breakfast

Him:No I can't stay

Me: Ohw

Him:I came to give you your pictures

Me:Ohw (I hugged him)thank you so much I love them

Him: Your welcome

"Hey baby"

Me:(it was Jake) hey love (we kissed)

Jake:Hy I'm her boyfriend and you are?

Kevin: I'm her friend ... I better go

Me:ok thanks again Kevin

Kevin:Sure bye

Me:Bye

Me: Oh he's so kind

Ava:Hey Vee who was that?

Me:Ahhh a friend

Ava:Oh he's hot (biting her lower lip)

Me: uhm

Ava:Come on Vee admit it

Me:Ahhh yah sure

Jake:No he's not ...you(pointing at Ava)go

Ava: I'm 17 (putting an angry face and walked away)

Me:Wow why so cold

Him:There's nothing hot about that boy and you know it

Me:I do?(confused)

Him:(He gave me an excuse me face)

Me:Of cause I do yes babe he's not hot at all

Him: Good let's go and eat

Me:(Whuuu ) Sure

(We sat on the table)

Henry: I can't stay I gotta go to work

Martha: Miss these came for you

Me:Red Roses (I took them)

Ava: Ohhh they beautiful

Me:(Jake wasn't taking this very well) oh there's a card {hope you enjoy your day beautiful}

Lucy:Ohhhh beautiful

Ava:Yes u got a special admire

Lucy:Ahhh I wonder

Ava:Maybe he's a Prince charming

Lucy:Ohw he's so sweet

Ava:Hmmm wish I could get one of those.

Lucy: He brought you those oh you must mean something to him

Ava:Yes no man give a girl flowers for no reason

Lucy:So true he's a keeper

Ava:Tots

Cc:GIRLS(SHOUTING) Respect she's dating Jake

Ava:Oh yah

Lucy: Sorry

Me:I don't know who's this really

Jake:I need to rush to work

Me:So soon

Jake:Yah (he left)

Me: ok bye ... Oh God

Cc:Don't worry he'll be fine

Me:Im serious I don't know who's this

Ava:I'm really sorry

Lucy:Sorry girlfriend

•

•

•

(I thought I should go to Jakes office to apologize I found him alone)

Me:Hy

Him:Hey

Me:I've been getting them lately I don't know where they come from

Him: Oh that's weird

Me: Jake pls let's talk

Him: I'm busy sorry

(I locked the office)

Me:I'm really sorry

Him:Its not your fault nor mine

Me:Can't you be serious with me pls (he was busy with paper work)

Him:(he stopped and looked at me) How many lies are you hiding from me?

Me: Are you serious do you really think I'll lie to you?

Him:You did once

Me:That was different and you know it

Him:(he looked at me)

Me:I lied to protect you at first now...

Him:To protect me ha yah right

Me:You know what I'm leaving I can't deal with you like that

(I left)

- 
- 
- 

(I went to Miguel about the money he gave me...I found him busy with work)

Me:We need to talk

Him:Hey Miss Vee you look dazzling today

Me:I don't need your money

Him:I insist

Me:(walking through the door) keep it I DON'T WANT IT

(I left who does he think he is ... I went to Sia ... I found her watching TV )

Me:Heyyy(Sad)

Her:Ohw hello come sit down

Me:Jake is mad at me (sad)

Her:Why? Why's that?

Me:(we were at the sofa I told her the whole story)

Her:Its not your fault though besides the one you lied about your virginity

Me:I know that Sia help me to feel better here not making me feel worse

Her:I'm sorry I'm sorry ok fine he needs to apologize

Me:You think?

Her:No I know he has too you did nothing wrong the Roses just popped out of nowhere

Me:I know right but to him I'm the bad guy

Her:Fighting in a relationship is Norma

Me:We just started dating and we have problems WOW

Her:You'll get over them don't worry

(She hugged me)

Me:I missed you a lot

Sia:Same here

- 
- 
- 

(Then I went to the house then straight to sleep)

- 

(About 7 I woke up I was so hungry I found my plate at the oven I sat down and ate...I was still on my dress and bare foot my face was terrible)

"Hey"

Me:Jake

Him:I went to your room earlier you looked peacefully asleep I didn't want to disturb

Me:What do you want?(annoyed)

- 
- 
- 

To be continued ....

- Continuation -

Him:Look I'm sorry

Me:(I just looked at him)

Him:I'm sorry babe come on

Me:That's your apology?

Him:(He walked to me and hold my waist) I'm sorry babe from the bottom of my heart ok?

Me:(Getting his hands off me) Don't touch

Him:(He hold me tighter) You smell amazing (kissing my neck and shoulder) Hmmm

Me:No no (I walked away) apologise the right way

Him:Ok wait up (I went to my room)

Him:(he walked after me and locked) Vee wait

Me:Talk Jake

Him:Look I was wrong I'm really sorry I overreacted

Me:You made me look like I new who sent me those (looking sad I looked at the window)

Him:Sorry babe I was stupid I promise I won't do it again

Me:(I looked at him) You promise?

Him: I promise (he smiled at me and hugged me from behind)

•

•

•

Lucy's POV

(I'm feeling dizzy now)

Me:Ava (Then I rushed to the toilet I vomited)

Ava: (came running after me) are you ok

Lucy: No I'm not

(She went to the door and yelled for help)

Ava:Ppl are coming

(My head hit the floor then black out)

•

Ava's POV

(OMG I wonder what will happen to her at least she's with a Doctor who examine her when she was raped she's in good hands ... We are panicking ... I called Jaden to in form him about this situation)

Me:Hey

Him:Hey you sound worried what happened?

Me: Lucy is in hospital

Him: What?

Me: She passed out and.. (I cried)

Him: I'm coming

(He dropped the call)

•

(He arrived Dad panicked)

Dad: Ava what does this boy doing here?

Me: Dad pls he's a friend

Dad: No he must leave (shouting)

Vee: Jake pls this is a hospital jeez calm yourself

Him: No

Vee: No Jake pls do it for Lucy

Henry: Let him Son he did nothing wrong

(They left him)

Jaden: I'm sorry I couldn't stay home after hearing what you said on the phone

Me: Its fine I knew you would like to be here with her

Him: Yah I lov...I mean I care alot about her

Me: You love her

Him: (he smiled) Yah a lot

Me: Pray for her to wake up so you can tell her

Him: I am

•

•

Siviwe's POV

Me: Jake are you insane

Him:That boy doesn't deserve to be here

Me:He did nothing wrong he came to support us pls control ur anger

Him:Fine but I don't like him

Me:You don't have to ... You hate everyone that you don't know

(I left him I went to consult the Family then the Doctor)

•

Doc:I have good news

Cc:(with a shaking voice and red eyes because of crying) Tell us doctor

Doc:She's fine pregnant woman react in different ways

Henry:She's what

Ava:Oh God

Cc:My poor baby

Doc:She wasn't using controlling pills plus her Raper didn't use condom

Me: Oh God but is the baby healthy?

Doc:They both fine

Austin: Is she awake

Doc:Yes she told me herself she also suspected that

Henry:When can we see her

Doc: She wants to see Siviwe I think

Me:Yes thats me

Doc:Follow me Miss

(I followed her)

•

•

•

(I got in)

Me: Hey baby

Her: Hey

Me:How are you feeling?

Her:That I'm pregnant I feel so much alive

Me:Its great that you happy about your pregnancy

Her: I am its mine and mine alone what will that bastard say now (crying) this is evidence I want him locked up

Me:You'll seek your revenge sweety all in due

Her:Yes I would (police came in)

Police officer: I'm sorry I need to talk to the patient pls

Me:Sure bye sweety (I kissed her fore head)

Her: Bye

(I left them)

•

Jake:How is she?

Me:She's doing fine the Police are with her

Ava: Her reaction is weird

Me:Yes I thought she wouldn't want the baby she's a good person

Henry: If she's good with it were also good with it

Cc:I raised a wonderful soul

Jake: Yes you did Mom

Doc: Ahhh she can go home everything is fine with her

Jake:Sure I'm coming to take her

•

(Then now we at the house)

Lucy:Im fine guys I'm not sick I'm pregnant ok

Me: yes we know so stop complaining ... I'll take her upstairs guys ok

(We got in her room)

Me:Good now lay in bed

Lucy:I need a warm bath first

Me:I'll make it for you (rushing to the bathroom)

Lucy:I can do it myself you know

Me:(Yelling from the bathroom) Yah I know now chill

Me:Its ready come

Lucy:Ok

Me: Jaden was there too

(She took of her clothes and got in I sat on the toilet sit I closed it)

Her:I saw him I wanted to talk to him but I couldn't

Me: At least he was there to support you

Her:Yah (she blushed)

Me:Am I missing something

Her:Vee no

Me:OK I'll leave you

(I left her blushing )

•

Δ

•

Jaden's POV

(My phone rang it was Lucy)

Me:Hey

Her:Hey I...uhmmm wanted to say thank you for caring

Me:There's no need for that ... Congratulations anyway if that's ok

Her:its doesn't matter who's the Father I'm the Mother and Thank you

Me:Your pregnancy will bring some light you'll see

(I heard someone banding the door)

Her:Who's that?

Me:I'll check it out ... Police?

Police: We looking for Sam North

Me:Yes (yelling) SAM

Him:What

Me:Your needed down here

(He came running)

Police:You under arrest of of rape by Lucy Carter...

Him:That's not true I didn't rape her we both agreed...

(Cuffing him)

Police: you have a right to remain silent .. Everything you say or do will be used against you in the Court of law ... You if you can't have a lawyer .....(they said that walking away with him)

Him:J call Dad pls ...(he got in the car)

Lucy:Jaden..... Jaden hello..... hello...

Me:Yes I'm here

Her:What happened did they arrest him?

Me:Yes ... I gotta call Dad

Her:Sure I'm sorry though you don't deserve this torture

Me:No it's ok bye ok

Her: Bye

(I called Dad I told him everything)

•

Δ

•

Lucy's POV

•

(I got out of the bath then put on a gown then went downstairs)

Me:He's arrested

Mom: Who?

Dad: What are you talking about?

Me:Sam he's arrested (I hugged Vee I'm still here bcz of her)

Vee:That's great baby

Me:But I feel sad for Jaden he doesn't deserve this

Vee:It's ok baby (she hugged me)

•

•

•

- Chapter 14 -

•

•

•

rise and shine

(I woke up wore my blue jeans with white shirt and black heels then headed downstairs)

Martha: Miss this came for you

Me: Box? Its from who

Martha: I didn't check Ma'am

Me: Thanks Martha

(I opened it ... Its diamond ear rings OH shit if Jake sees this I'm dead alive )

Me:Martha hide this for me ok I still want to look at it

Martha:Ok Ma'am

(I went to the table)

Me:Morning everyone

Them:Morning

Cc:You look shocked

Me:Me? Pshhh no I'm not its just I'm nervous for the show

Cc:Oh that's normal sweetie

Me:Yah

(I eat my food Lucy came to sit down)

Me:Are you ok?

Her:Yah I'm fine

Me:O-k

(No she's not OK her eyes are swollen like a person who hasn't been sleeping )

- 
- 
- 

Jaden's POV

(I went to visit my brother)

Me:Hy

Him: oh pls not you

Me: Shut up and listen

Him:Oh again with your speeches

Me:She's pregnant

Him:What!

Me:She's pregnant Sam pls do the right thing for once in your life just do it for your baby that baby doesn't deserve a Father like you

Him: Get out

Me: Whatever you say

(I left)

- 
- 
- 

(At noon Sia came to visit me we went to my room)

Me: So how are things?

Her: At work boring without you at home great since Lucas just moved in

Me: What?

Her: Yes me and Lucas are leaving together

Me: Don't you think it's a bit too soon

Her: No not at all

Me: Oh-k but..

Her: No but Vee be happy for me as my Best friend coz I'm happy again with the man I truly love

Me: Of course I am happy for you

- 
- 
- 

Lucy's POV

(At the store)

Me: So you think these pills can make me abort easily?

Emily(Shop assistant): yes

Me: Will I feel pain

Her: Of course a lot of pain

Me: But I don't want to feel pain

Her:There's no other way

Me:Fine I'll take them

(I went home then straight to my room I locked I poured water I read the instructions it said drink 3 pills and wait when you feel pain go to the toilet ... This was terrifying the possible outcomes are shocking "the baby can survive and can be mentally disturbed or be paralysed if your few months pregnant ... Its it's been weeks there are 80% chances the baby can survive..." Oh this is making me sweat ... I can't have a rapist baby I just won't do that that bastard doesn't deserve anything good to him but I do and that's freedom not being blessed with a child that I'll probably hate soon ... I took the three pills and water ....

- 
- 
- 

To be continued...

- Continuation -

- 

Me:Sia Lucy looked stressed this morning

Sia:No a pregnant woman can't be stressed Vee plus it's by rape

Me: So what do you think?

Sia: Ppl like that can abort sweetie

Me:But she's fine with her pregnancy

Sia:Maybe that's what she wants you to believe

Me:No she won't do that

Sia: You never know

(I rushed to her room I opened it its locked I shouted finally she opened)

Me:Thank God your OK

Her:Thank God your hear (we hugged she was crying)

Me:Shhh don't ever scare me like that ok?

Her:Yes Vee I'm sorry its just this baby will remind me of the things Sam did to me

Me:Can I see this Sam guy again pls

Her:(she searched him on Facebook then gave me her phone) here he is

Me:Oh (OMG this is the guy that I pumped into the other day he was coming from my Bosses office do they know each other? Bcz he doesn't work there)

Lucy: Are you ok?

Me:Ahhhh yes yes I am ... Throw these pills don't lose that baby its yours give it life and forget this abort thing ... Matter affect I'll take them

Lucy: I promise I won't its just I wasn't thinking straight

Me:Good( I took them then flushed them on the toilet then went to my room)

Sia:What?

Me:She tried to a abort but I stopped her

Sia:Oh that's fucked up

Me:(I was thinking about this Sam guy with my Boss Miguel what connection do they have? )

Sia:Vee..Vee...VEE????

ME:huh? What?

Sia:What's on your mind?

Me:the guy that raped Lucy knows my Boss I saw him walking out of his office and that boy doesn't work there Sia:So what are your instincts telling you?

Me:Nothing yet but I'll find out I also need to find out about my Father ... It looks like he lived here

Sia:Vee what if you find out things that you shouldn't be finding out?

Me: Like my father's past ... I don't think so

Sia: You are so stubborn

(I went downstairs)

Me: Martha the box pls

Martha: Here it is Miss

(I took it upstairs)

Me:Look what I was sent this morning

Sia:Ahhh they are gorgeous From Jake ohhhh he's so romantic

Me:No its not from him i don't know this person

Sia:These are diamonds Vee

Me:I know that ... Should I tell Jake?

Sia:Duhhh yes this person will ruin your relationship

Me:But what will I say like" hey babe this came for me this morning"?

Sia:Yes of cause every challenge face it together don't hide things from each other

Me:I guess your right

Sia:Go to him now

Me:He's not home yet

Sia:Vee go he's here

Me:(dragging my feet to the door I knocked he opened)

Him: You are the last person to knock at my door you know

Me:I'm sorry (he was kissing me) stop stop STOP JAKE

Him: I'm sorry

Me:This came for me this morning

Him:What is it?

Me:Open it

Him:(He's eyes popped out ) diamond ear rings?

Me:Yes I don't know who sent them

Him:I don't like this ... Why didn't you tell me at first?

Me:I didn't want to worry you

Him:This guy is taking things way too far

Me:I'm scared that he's following me.

Him:(He hugged me) Don't be scared I'll do something about this ok?

Me:Ok(he kissed my forehead)

- 
- 
- 

Sam's POV

(I'll have a baby this is great news but I did I do it ... Lucy is hurting where ever he is ... I'll admit the truth then pay for my sins then Dad came to visit me)

Me:Dad

Him: Son

Me:What do you want here?

Him:To tell you you'll be out of here really soon

Me:I don't wanna Dad

Him:What? Who's reputation do you think you are ruining here? I'm the very respected Businessman in here don't you test me boy

Me:But Dad

Him:Dad nothing

Me:She's pregnant (a tear escape my eye)

Him:It could be anyone's

Me:Its mine I know its mine when I slept with her she was a virgin

Him: What's that gotta to do with anything?

Me:Dad that baby is mine I have a baby and I'll fight for its right. ...I know what I did is unforgivable but I will do it for my baby

Him: Look here boy you'll do what I tell you to do OK

Me:I don't care about you Dad I care about my kids well being

(He left he was filled with anger ... I'll do this at the court for my baby ... FOT MY BABY)

- 
- 
-

Henry POV

(On the phone)

Me:That's good news

(I dropped the call)

Me:,Cecilia I have good news

Her:Talk to me

Me:Sophia have a Family

Her:What?

Me:Yes it looks like her Father ran away from home when he joined our gang

Her:Where is it?

Me:Funny thing is they live here

Her:What?

Me:They moved here a year ago

Her:Oh we must tell her

Me:Yes but not now

Her:When Henry that poor girl deserves the truth

Me: Soon but I can't risk her going there our enemies will kill her

Her:I forgot they said that night "I will kill your daughter too" but they never found out who it is

Me:And I think the gifs she's getting got something to do with all of this

Her:Babe..

Me:Yes I know what I'm saying

Her: You think they already found out?

Me:Yes

Her:Oh my God

•

•

To be continued ...

- Chapter 15 -

- 
- 
- 

Jake:How about dinner?

Me: Dinner sounds great

Jake:Tonight pls

Me:Really like now?

Jake:Unless your busy

Me:No no not at all I'm not busy

Jake:Ok

Me:I'll go and change

Jake:Sure

(I left ...yesssss I'm going on a date finally I got in my room)

Me: Sia ... Sia ... Where are you then( I saw a paper)

{I had an emergency I had to rush home bye love you}

Me:Oh great then I don't even know what I'll wear

(I looked at my closet I finally found a Navy knee long princesses dress with black heels then I took a shower then did my make up someone knocked at the door)

Me: Good timing

Him:Oh really let's go then ... ON the back door i don't want ppl to see us

Me:Why?

Him:Maybe we won't come back home tonight so I want them to suspect something it's better they think were asleep

Me:"Maybe"?

Him:Yes "Maybe"

Me:What are you trying to say Mr Ellis?

Him:Hmmm I'm just saying Mrs Ellis (holding my figure )

Me:Oh don't get your hopes up

Him:oh trust me you'll be Mrs Eliis soon

Me: Yah right let's go (walking away)

Him:(Standing at my door) what do you mean?

Me:(I turned and looked at him) Let's go (I giggled )

- 
- 
- 

Sia's POV

Me:I'm home sweetie

Him:Where were you

Me:At my friends house

Him:Oh her(looking annoyed)

Me:Yes her ... What's the emergency?

Him:I'm hungry

Me:Come on Lucas I already cooked your plate is in the oven all you needed to do is to warm it up

Him:Do it yourself

Me: Fine I'm not your wife you know

Him: What did you say

(He looked scary and angry)

Me:I said nothing

Him:that's what I thought too

Me:(I warmed his food I gave him his phone rang it was near me he was on the couch watching TV I took it to give him it was Sandra )

Me:Here's your phone

Him: (he took it and answered I left him ... Now I smell cheating is he cheating on me again? No he won't)

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

Her:This place is beautiful

Me:Yah it matches to your beauty

Her: Oh thanks (she smiled she kept on talking but I'm just staring at her she's so beautiful especially when she smiles) so what do you think?

Me:(i wasn't listen oh God)

Her: Babe where you listening to me?

Me:(say yes I don't want to think I wasn't paying attention to her) Yes babe its great

Her:Really?

Me:Yes

Her:Wow ok thank you

(We ordered she ordered what I ordered then we ate)

- 
- 
- 

Cecilia's POV

(At our bedroom)

Me: Baby are you sure about keeping this a secret?

Him:Yes

Me:What if they attack now

Him:They won't they are not sure yet

Me:What do you mean

Him: I know a thugs mind

Me:Of cause you do

Him:Yes so they are not 100% sure its his daughter but when they do ALL HELL WILL BREAK  
LOSE

Me:Don't say that oh she's a good girl and out son finally found love

Him: I know that that's why I want her hear with us not out there

Me:Can you tell me what happened that night you never told me

Him:Its really said to talk about it ok he was so happy about his daughter that night but his  
brother turned against him because of money so they killed him ... He was like a brother to me I  
have all of this today bcz of him I'll never forget what he risked for me

Me:You are not making sense Henry

Him: I don't have to

(He slept )

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

Him:We done

Me:Hmmm yes this is amazing

Him:(he paid the bill) let's go now

Me:Sure

(He drove off)

Me:Where are you going this is not the way

Him:I want to take you somewhere

Me:But where?

Him: To my place?

Me:Your place?

Him: Yes

Me: You have a place?

Him:Hey my parents bore me sometimes ok

Me:Wow ok then why am I going there?

Him: I want to show you something ... Just stop with the questions pls

Me:Ok I can't wait for this

Him:Oh I can't wait trust me

Me:

(After a while we arrived we got in)

Me:Jake this is a house

Him:I told you its my house

Me:I thought you were talking about an apartment

Him:I would have said apartment if it was right

Me:This is beautiful

Him:Thank you

Me:So do you decorate it like this?

Him:No I did this for you

Me:What? How did you know that we'll do this

Him:I just knew

Me:Your good

(We kissed he took me upstairs in bridal style)

Me:wow flowers on the bed

Him:Is it too much Babe?

Me:What no this is so romantic babe I love it

Him: Ohw

(We kissed again .... )

•

So my ppl I won't bore you with boring details y'all already know what happened next one thing led to another we made love ...

•

To be continued...

- Continuation -

•

•

•

Me:(While we were kissing) Hmmm wait wait

Him:What? It was getting good

Me: I'm... Ahhh

Him:I won't hurt

Me:Of cause you will why you guys always think this won't hurt

Him: Because I won't hurt you like you said I should be gentle

Me:You still remember that?

Him:Why wouldn't i? That was the first day I was burning with disire for you

Me:Really

Him:Yes

(We kissed he took off my dress I took off his blazer then we got in bed he was getting fast)

Me: Woah woah slow down jeez(In a low and sexy tone)

Him:Sorry Mrs Ellis

(I giggled)

Him:Hmmm like that?

Me: Yes

(He was kissing my neck then I unbuttoned his shirt Hmmm his abs Now we both half naked he was going down my belly button then he went down a little)

Me: No no wait (I pulled his head up)

Him:What?

Me:You were not gonna(I said that looking at my pussy)

Him: what don't you want me too?

Me: No that's disgusting plus after that you'll kiss my lips noway

Him:Its really good babe

Me:No Jake I won't do that I don't like it

Him:Its ok

(We continued to kiss he took off my bra then sucked my boobs I moaned in pleasure while my legs were wrapped around his waist then he started moving his lower part to insert his dick)

Me:Ahhh wait

Him:You gotta be kidding

Me:Don't be fast ok it will hurt and burn like hell

Him: Trust me

(I nodded he carried on he started making love to me it didn't hurt a lot but I did feel pain but pleasure was more my nails were digging his back ... I bended my back then he started going faster I moaned even louder he also moaned I was like

yesssssssss he also enjoyed it hmmm but I said that in my head ppl ... So when he was done we breathed heavily)

Him:Wow

Me: Don't mention it

Him: (he looked at me) I love you

Me:(I also looked at him) I love you too

(We kiss again then he started to heat it up)

Me:No no (I stopped him)

Him:Come on

Me:Nooo (he started kissing my neck then we did the second round)

•

•

•

Ava's POV

(I went to Vee's room he's not there I went to my Dads room too he was also not there then I went straight to Lucy's)

Me:Girlfriend

Her: Hey what's up your interdicting my reading

Me:Vee's not here

Her: And?

Me:And Dad too

Her:What?

Me:Yesss

Her:Do you think they are..?

Me:No Lucy don't be a nauty girl

Her:I'm just saying

Me:You should be doing that with Jaden

Her:Shut up (hitting my arm playfully)

Me:Hmmm someone is blushing

Her:I'm pregnant Ava plus with his brother's baby(looking sad)

Me:Don't say that pls ... If you love him go for it ... And the court is around the corner

Her:I know Ava ... I love him so much I still don't know why I chose his brother I was so dumb

Ava:Don't worry yourself ok come here

(I hugged her)

•

•

•

Sia's POV

Me:What's this?

Him:What its lipstick in my shirt what does that mean

Me:Cheating

Him:Look Sia I'm surrounded by women at work don't you dare to accuse me of that

Me:Ah of cause bcz your nothing but a coward

(He slapped me)

Me: (I looked at him with shock he never raised he's hand on me ... What changed)

Him:I'm sorry hunny it's just you drove me to do this I would never cheat on you

Me:You slapped me Lucas

Him:Sweetie

Me:You dared to lay a finger on me Lucas

Him: Babe you just... I'm sorry hunny

Me:You slapped me Lucas

(I left the room)

•

•

•

I gave you your details    you guys are noisy I love y'all

- Chapter 16 -

•

•

•

(Ohhh already morning at what time did we sleep?    I need more sleep ... I looked at my

phone I freaked out)

Me:(I streamed) ahhhhhhhh Jake wake up (shaking him)

Him:(In a sleepy voice) What?

Me:Ohw your so cute when your asleep

Him:What?

Me:Ahhhhh (I snapped back to reality) ahhh I mean WERE LATE

Him:Ahhhhh its 9

Me:I know

Him:Let's take a quick shower

Me: Yah let's go

(We were rushing to the shower)

Him:Open the shower quickly

(I did we showered)

Him>Last night was amazing though

Me:This is not the time Jake

(He was tickling me )

Me:Stop stop were gonna be late

Him: Let's dump work today

Me: No I can't today is very important there's this amazing photographer coming

Him: They have models (still kissing my neck)

Me: I'm one of them Jake

(We got of the shower we to work)

•

•

(At work)

Me:Kevin

(He came to me)

Me:I'm not too late am I?

Him:Where were you ... They need you there

Me: Ok ok (I ran inside)

Kevin:So did Jake agree?

Me:Yes I'm so happy I thought he wouldn't

Kevin:If I was him I woulde

Me:Kevin pls its not a big deal plus its just pictures

Kevin: You'll be naked Vee

Me:Stop confusing me he said its ok I told him last night at dinner

Kevin: Ok

(He said its fine I'll do it if he's ok with it)

- 
- 
- 

Lucy's POV

(At school)

Me:Its a Trial Saturday

Ava:Yah ain't you happy about it

Me:I am and scared too

Ava:You'll be fine let's go to class you'll just say what happened

Me:And now everyone will know I'm pregnant

Ava:Pls stop thinking about that

- 
- 
-

Austin's POV

(I went to my girlfriend's apartment Hanna)

Me:Hey hunny

Her:Hey baby ...So when are you going to tell your Family the news?

Me: Again with that Hanna I can't now my Family is going through crisis

Her:And I'm not?

Me:Hanna not now I'm not in the mood

Her:When will you be in the mood Austin huh?

Me:I better get out of here I thought I should spend time with my girlfriend and relax but I was wrong

Her: When will I stop being your girlfriend?

Me:Hanna we talked about this

Her:Well I didn't agree on what you said

Me:Know what I'm leaving

(I left)

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

(Ahhh work was work I'm tired so I went to Sia's apartment I missed her)

Me:Oh girlfriend... I gotta tell you something but guess what happened first

Sia:...(she was looking down)

Me:Sia what happened?

(I lifted her face up she had a bruises)

Me:What happened?

Her:Its nothing Vee its a door

Me: (Lucas entered ) no no this is not a door

Lucas:What are you doing here?

Me:Did you hit her

Sia:Vee no (she was down and sad)

Me:(I stood up made my way to Lucas) Did you hit her?

Him:Huh your crazy

Me:(Sia was holding me back)

Sia:Vee pls

Me:You dare to lay your filthy hands on my girl? Huh Lucas? Do you know you just lost a good girl? Now do yourself a favour pack your bags and leave

Him:(he laughed) you gotta be kidding

Sia:Vee stop

Me:Leave Lucas or I'll do it myself (I went to his closet I packed all his clothes)

Him:Leave my stuff alone

Me:Look here Man she's my friend and the only truly friend I have I won't let a scumbag like you take her away from me its either your leaving or I'll report you

Him:You wouldn't dare

Me: Try me

(He left)

Me: Don't let men control you sweetheart there are a lot of women die because of abuse

Her:Thank you so much my friend

Me:I'm here for you that bustard deserves everything that I did to him

Her:(she hugged me)

Me: Look at you...your face is pink ...let's go to the doctor

Her:No they'll ask questions

Me:Then you'll report him

Her: No let him

Me:Ok

(Jake called)

Him:Hey

Me:Hey

Him:I just got in the house and your not here where are you?

Me:At Sia's where you looking for me?

Jake: You know it I miss you

Me: Well I'm sorry babe my best friend needs me ok

Jake: Ok love you

Me: Where's "I"?

Him:I love you

Me:I love you too

•

Sia:So what was the news?

Me:Nahhh forget it its silly

Her:Come on Vee

Me: Its nothing. ...do you want coffee bcz I want one? (I made coffee)

Her:Are you glowing?

Me:No

Her:Yes you are did you get some?

Me:Now your exaggerating

Her:Yes you did

Me:Fine ... Yes

Her:see? I know you

Me:

Her:when?

Me:Last night

Her:You go girl

Me:Shut up

Her:So no red flags?

Me:Just one

Her:What? Was it that bad?

Me: No it wasn't bad actually it was way amazing than I expected ok but he was gonna muff me

(Sia laughed at me till she gone out of breath)

Her: I can't breath

Me:Shut up Sia its not funny

Her:You should let the man do it

Me: Ewww no

Her:I love you

Me:I love you more

•

•

•

- Continuation -

•

•

•

(After I spent time with Sia I went to the house)

Me:Hey Martha

Martha:Hey Miss Mr Jake is waiting for you upstairs

Me: What's with the emergency

(I went up stairs)

Me:Hey Martha said you wanted to see me

Him:Yes I did what's this?

Me:What's what?

(It was pictures that I took today at work)

Me:Ohw don't I look hot babe?

Him: Your naked

Me:We talked about this

Him:What when?

Me:At the dinner table last night

Him:(he looked confused and shocked)

Me:You were not listening

Him:Of cause I was

Me:No you were not ... Coz I told you that at work they will take pictures of us nude you said its ok plus I'm not completely nude my private parts are not shown ... Its clear you were not listening to me

Him: I'm sorry but this is too much

Me:What's the big deal?

Him:I don't like you showing yourself like that

Me:Its part of the work I do and I wasn't the only one ok

(I snatch the magazine I was on the cover I was cover girl ok then I saw scoop "One of the models of Model agency is dating one of the richest business man in the country from living in dirt to living like a Queen")

Me:What nonsense is this

Him: Don't mind the media ok

Me:(I saw another one " oh she is not waisting time she already moved to their House isn't that lovely" the comments on that said "oh she's a gold digger I'm pretty sure she didn't get the job by herself" ... "Oh she's a honest woman trying to make an honest living" that was better)

Me:I can't take this they are all over me

Him:They are making up those ugly things about you so you can get offended

Me: (I was angry so angry) By the way I wouldn't have took those pictures if you didn't want me but you said it was ok now your making me feel bad about myself like I'm the bad guy in this story (I walked to my room then locked the door then slept)

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

(Ahhh women that one is going to drive me crazy then Martha entered my room rushing)

Martha: Sir Sir someone is here for you downstairs

Me: Who is it?

Martha:I think you need to see it for yourself

Me:I'll be down there

Martha: Ahhh Sir she's really not the "waiting" type

Me:She?

Martha: Yes Sir ... Uhmhm Sir pls don't freak out when you see her

Me: What a misery Martha OK

(I went downstairs....-I wonder who is she???)

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

(I'm Jaden and Sam's Father ... Today I went to visit my Mom she lives near by)

Me: (I yelled) Mom

Mom:Come to the Kitchen sweetie

Me:Oh I forgot that that's your favourite place in this whole house

Mom:You know it

Kate:Hey uncle

Me:Hey sweetie where's your Mom?

(Kate is my niece)

Kate: She's at work her job wants her 24/7 she's hardly home

Me: She doesn't need the money I don't know why she insist on doing nursing

(Zoe walked in Kate's Mom)

Her:Its because I like helping ppl ...

(Looking at Kate) sweetie go to your room I'll be there

Kate: Ok bye Uncle

Me:Bye sweetie

(She left)

Zoe:Unlike you Brother Dear

Me:Ok look don't you disrespect me like that or I'll...

Zoe:Or you'll what huh? Kill me like our Brother?

Mom:Ok stop it you two

Zoe:No Mom the truth must be told I sick of the lies in this family

Me:I came to tell y'all that my Son is arrested

Mom:Oh my God

Zoe:I told you and your wife since that boy was young he'll be trouble because you both spoiled him

Me:Don't call my wife that may her soul rest in peace

Zoe:You called that a wife ... It was a perfect match in heaven you both deserved each other I'm shocked you have a wonderful son like Jaden he's the only good soul in all of you (she walked away then she stopped) oh another thing I hope he rots in prison for raping an innocent girl then impregnate her

Me:Where did you hear that?

Her:At work ... I'm a nurse remember(she walked away gosh she's a pain)

Mom: That girl is pregnant?

Me:Yes Mom but I'm not sure my son impregnated her

Mom:Son stop blinding yourself what happened happened you can't change it

Me:Mom I came here for your support not this ... I shouldn't have

(I left)

- 
- 
- 

Still more to come ... Stay tuned

- Chapter 17 -

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

Me:Angela (I was dead shocked like what the hell?)

Her:Hello my Love (grabbing my hand and smiling)

Me:What are you doing here?

Her:I'm here for you of cause and my baby

Me:After all these years

Her:Oh Jeke pls I was Young

Me:Huh young keep telling yourself that

Her: You still got the temper you ain't change at all (smiling to me)

Me:I want nothing to do with you and my daughter too

Her:How is she I want to see her

Me:She's asleep and why with the bags

Her:Oh Sweetie come on I'm here for my family for us to be a family again

Me:oh pls you abandoned us REMEMBER?

(My Mom walked to us)

Mom:Long time no see Angela

Her:Oh Ma'am it's just life life can freak you to do bab very bad things but I'm here now

Vee:Martha (yelling for Martha and rubbing her eyes)

Vee: Ohw hello(she handed for a hand shake to Angela she just looked at her) ohwk (she left)  
Martha (still yelling and looking for Martha)

Angela:Who's her?

Me:My girlfriend

Angela:Ohw

(Vee came with Martha talking)

Me:Babe come here pls ... This is Angela Ava's Mom

(Ava at the background)

M

Ava:My Mom? I don't have a Mom

Angela:Its me sweetie I came back

Ava:(getting close to us) For what ... For money?

Angela:Of cause not sweetie

Ava:Don't call me that you witch she went upstairs cryiy

Vee:I'll talk to her

(She left)

Angela:She's a mom to my Daughter now? What else did that gold digger take away from me

Mom:I see you came with bags

Angela: Yes

Mom:Martha tell the guards to take these bags upstairs in the guest room

Me:What?

Angela: Oh thank you you won't regret it

Mom: Ahhh Jake it's the middle of the night she'll move out when she gets a place to stay

(Ohw Mom Vee and Angela won't get along )

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

(Ahhh today I'm getting paid on my job so I'm going shopping after work)

Me: Morning ppl

Them: morning

Me: Where's Lucy

Ava: Getting ready she'll be here

(Then she came downstairs)

Lucy: Morning... Angela your here

Henry: I was also shocked sweetheart pls ear you'll be late for school

Angela: So how's school guys

(It was silent at the table)

Angela: Ohw k

Me: Lucy take this

Lucy: But Vee thats disgusting

Me: Its good for your condition

Lucy: For a pregnant girl don't be shy to say it

Angela: Oh your pregnant (ppl were so annoyed) when I was pregnant with Ava her Father will always make sure I ate well I got enough sleep if I'm tired he'll always wash my feet oh he was a great father and he still

(Should I be angry or jealous I don't know )

-

•

•

(At work)

Kevin: They say your doing good but your always late like now your late

Me: Oh I'm really sorry I was... Ahhh uhmmm

Kevin: Pls make time for you to be on that show

Me: Yes yes

•

•

•

Lucy's POV

Me: So your Mom huh?

Ava: Pls I don't want to talk about that

Me: I'm sorry

(Jaden approached us)

Him: hey girl

Us: Hey

Him: So trial soon

Me: Yah I can't wait for it to pass I can't I'm too scared

Him: Don't be scared you got him on your hands now

Me: Yah

(We went to class)

•

•

•

Zoe's POV

(I woke up late since I'll go to work at noon)

Me: Hey Mom

Mom: Hey my Angel ... But you were hush on your Brother

Me: Mom we both know my Brother was killed he was killed the day his baby was being born he was so happy about having a child and my Brother betrayed him I'll never EVER forgive and forget that he was the only person that understood me that cared about me and y'all didn't even bother to look for that baby because the Mother was black you got no soul

Mom: Don't talk to me like that

(Our voices were on top of the roof)

Me: Believe it or not if that baby died or the Mother y'all will be held responsible because my Father left Money for Jason it should have been given to them because they came from a poor background

Mom: No stranger will lay hands on my husband's money

Me: They deserve it know what sometimes I think YOU KILLED FATHER bcz of the money

Mom: How dare you Zoe

Me: Don't worry Mom I won't be surprised you did many unbelievable things in your life

(I left)

- 
- 
- 

Things are getting warmed up ppl don't miss it

- Continuation -

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

(After work I went home I found Angela watching TV)

Me: Hey Martha

Martha: Hey Ma'am

Me:Hey Angela

Her:(she undermined me) hey

(I went upstairs to my room I took a nap)

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

(Arg I found this snake)

Me:Why are you still here

Her:Hey to you too Love how was work today?

Me:Your irritating me you know

(I left went to my room Angela walked after me)

Me:What the hell do you want?

Her:(she got close and closer to me) I just want my man back

Me:Your crazy after all these years without even calling

Her:I know what I did is unforgivable but pls forgive me

Me:(pushing her away) I've moved on leave me alone

Her:(Touching my collar and rubbing my arms) We both know I'm the only woman for you I'm the only woman who can complete you no woman in this whole world can replace me and (she whispered the last part in my ear) you know that

(Then she left)

- 
- 
- 

Ava's POV

Me: Yah school was fun today

Lucy:No school practice was fun

Me: Yah yah

(We got in the house laughing)

Angela:Hey girls

Lucy:Hey Angela

Me:I'm going to my room (Lucy followed me)

Her:How long will you stop ignoring your Mom?

Me:I don't have a Mother she left me for a money she doesn't deserve me nor my Father we are doing fine with out her

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

(Oh I can't sleep my head is hurting so much ... I took my bag then went to see a Doctor )

Me:Hy I'm looking for Doctor Ngcune

Assistant: Sorry Ma'am she's not here now but can you wait for her?

Me:Oh I can't wait at all but OK it's fine

(A nurse approached me)

Her:Are you ok Ma'am

Me:No my head is hurting so much I'm getting dizzy

Her:Come this way I'll treat you

(We went to a small room look like an office)

Her:Pls lay on our bed

Me:ok(I laid there)

Her:Do you have a lot in your mind?

Me:No not that I'm sure of

Her:Don't you think a lot maybe its stress

Me:Yes I do think a lot its just I've been through hell these past few months

(She was checking my blood pressure)

Her:Oh like?

Me:My Mother died of Cancer

Her:What? Oh I mean I'm sorry to hear that

Me:Its ok I didn't have the money to buy all those treatment she needed

Her:I'm really sorry sure she gave birth to a sweet young lady

Me: Thanks

Her: Ok your done ... Uhm stop using the pills you were using take these and get enough sleep tomorrow you'll fell much better ok?

Me:Thank you so much your an Angel from above

Her:Just doing my job ... Ohwww here's my card when ever you feel any pain call me or when you need any medical help

Me:Oh thank you I sure will

(I left went to the house then went upstairs to my room I took the pills with water then got under my covers ... Jake entered)

Him:Hey baby

Me:Hey

Him:Are you ok?

Me:I have a headache that's all

Him:Let me (he placed his hand on my forehead and face)oh your burning up

Me:Don't worry I'll be fine I just came from a Doctor

Him:ok my Love let me sleep right next to you

(He slept right next to me)

•

•

•

Angela's POV

(I called Christian)

Me:Hey man your girl is giving me problems

Him:You lay your hands on her I'll kill you I told you break them off

Her:I'm trying he's too attached to this girl

Him:Your the mother of his child earn his trust back and win him over and get the money you deserve

Me:I'm trying Christian pls

Him:If you touch my sweetie pie I'll break your neck do you hear me

Me: Look don't threaten me ok

Him:And your little daughter

Me:I don't care about that spoiled brat I want my Man and the money maybe then I'll pretend to love her

Him: Then my baby will be my baby she'll be very thrilled to see me I'm the only man she ever loved and I'll forever will be

Me:She'll be yours

Him:Music to my ears

(He dropped the call I didn't care he can have his girl but I want my Jake back)

•

•

•

- Chapter 18 -

•

•

•

Siviwe's POV

(I woke up it was too early in the morning ... I kissed Jake all over his face so he can wake up)

Him:No let's sleep a little while(in a sleepy voice)

Me:No no

(He hold me tight to him)

Me:No we need to go to work

Him:Work can wait(in a sleepy voice)

Me:Wake up (I poked him in his eyes wanting to wake up then he did)

Him: But this is pure abuse it's still early

Me: Yah I know its just I slept early yesterday and now I can't sleep at all

Him:What about me?

Me:Nahhh your a man you can handle this

Him:I'll do the same to you one day

Me:I'll be pissed at you ... You should try me

Him:But you are abusing me

Me:You'll be fine

(We stayed in bed a little longer then went to shower together then he went to his room)

•

•

•

Breakfast time

Me: Hey Martha where's everyone?

Martha:They are coming

(Angela came down first)

Her:Hey

Me: Hey

Her:So how long since you've been dating my ex-boyfriend?

Me:(This chick is trying something) Ohw its been a month I think

Her:Ohw

(Is is necessary to say my "ex-boyfriend" psh jeez but is it necessary at all to ask me that...everybody came downstairs)

Ava:Hey Vee she hugged me

Me:Hey...why do I owe the surprise?

Ava:I just felt like it

Me:Well thank you

Lucy:Vee I saw your pictures again ... Ppl are talking ... The internet is stormed

Me:Ohw let me see ... Wow your right

Austin:Ahhh Family I want to share some news

(We all looked at him)

Austin: Hanna is pregnant and I'm going to marry her

Henry:That's all she ever wanted at the first place

(Henry left everyone kept quiet)

Me:Ahhh congratulations Austin

Austin:Thanks Vee

(He also left)

Lucy: Awkward

Me:What just happened?

Lucy: Daddy doesn't like Hanna I don't either she wants money from Austin but he's too blinded by love

Me:Ohw Wow

Jake:Nothing pissis me off than that Hanna...acting as if she loves my brother but all she wants its his money I doubt its his child

(I noticed Angela is not comfortable with this topic)

Me:I need to go

Jake:I'll drive you let's go

(This Angela is hiding something )

- 
- 
- 

Zoe's POV

Me:Kate hunny let's go to school I'll drive you

Kate: You'll drive me

Me: Yes hunny

Kate:That's a first

Me:Hey don't be like that with me girl

Kate:Ok sorry jeez

(I took her lunch box then got in the car ... I drove her to school then I went to work on my way I saw a man dropping Siviwe at some model company I guess ... Maybe she's a model ohw he kissed her maybe they are dating ... I need to be close to that girl maybe she's the baby I was searching for all these years that's one of the reasons why I did nursing)

- 
- 
- 

Angela's POV

(I called Christian)

Me:Look man I can't break them apart they even slept together last night

Him:Man I'll cut that Jake's head off

Me:Hey don't you even think about it

Him:You know what I'll take matters to my own hands

Me:What do you mean ... Your not coming here are you?

Him: Bye Angela your useless

(He dropped the call ... What is this man going to do Oh God help me he better not show up here)

•

•

•

David's POV

(I went to see my son)

Me:Hey son

Him:what do you want Dad?(looking annoyed)

Me:You'll be out here in no time

Him:Dad I don't want to be out of here I want to pay for my sins

Me:Hey child I'm not asking you here I'm telling you no son of mine will rot in prison for something they didn't do

Him:(crying) I did OK I did I raped Lucy (tears came running) and I'm sorry for that and I'm having a baby that is what makes me want to pay

Me:We'll see how long she'll stay pregnant

Him:If you try to do anything stupid to Lucy I'll kill with my own two hands do you hear me

Me: Give me your best shot boy

(I left ...he was screaming and yelling behind me)

Him:I'll kill you do you hear me I'll kill you

•

•

•

Henry's POV

(On the phone)

Me:So my friends Father also died many years ago

Him:Yes Sir

Me:Damn it will be hard to track down other members ... Look for his wife...I'll get to the bottom

of this even if its the last thing I do

Him:Yes Sir

- 
- 
- 

To be continued ... Christian is coming to town... Things are getting more and more interesting

- Continuation -

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

(After work I went home the show was postponed so it will be next week from now...so I got in)

Martha:Miss there's a Gentleman here to see you

Me:Ohw a "Gentleman" you say ok

(I went to the lounge)

Me:Christian?

Him:Vee

(We hugged ... I was so shocked he was my best friend in childhood and my ex-boyfriend when I was doing grade 10 but we broke up)

Me:What are you doing here?

Him:I saw you on the magazines and papers so I googled you

Me:Ohw wow its been a while

Him:Yah

Me: Pls take a sit

(We sat down)

Me:So your around town or...?

Him:No I don't live here I'm here for business so I live in a hotel

Me: Oh that's great

(We talked alot we catch up on our lives then Jake came to us)

Me: Hey

Jake:Hey Babe (he kissed me)

Me:Oh babe this is Christian my best friend when we were kids ... Christian this is Jake my boyfriend

Jake:Hey man

Christian: Hey (they hand shaked)

Christian: It was nice to see you again you so big now look as you

Me:           come on

Christian: Hmmm turn around for me

(I did)

Me:

(We hugged then he left)

Jake:I better go to bed

Me:Can I join you (blushing)

Him:No (he left... And then? Eiii amadoda abelungu   ... I followed him)

Me:Baby

Him:...

Me: What did I do wrong this time?

Him:That guy Christian "Turn around for me" what the hack was that

Me:Come on Babe he's a friend

Him:Nothing happened to you two ever in the past?

Me:There was something

Him:What?

Me:Its not like I've slept with him

Him:Never?

Me:Ever? What's the big deal? Even if I did it would be the past

Him: To me it wouldn't

Me:Fine I'm sorry

Him:How did he found you?

Me:He saw me on magazine's and...

Him:He saw your pictures and the once your half naked (Guys he was pissed at me I wanted to laugh he was turning pink)

Me:Ahhh maybe

Him: Oh God help me

Me:Babe come on I'll never take pictures like that again ok

Him:He already seen you

Me:But he won't touch me

Him:That's a fact .. I don't even like those tight hugs he gives you

Me: Hehake mhlola hai sisno emnqamlwezweni

Him: Come on now translate that

Me:Nothing I said it's fine I'll control him

Him:Good

(I laughed)

Him:What's that?

Me: Nothing (with a serious face) I better go to bed

Him:Hey don't leave

Me:Why not

Him:Because I miss you

Me: Ohwww that's cute but I feel like sleeping alone

Him:Ohhh your had enough of those tight hugs by that Christian guy

Me:(I couldn't help myself I busted out laughing )

Him:Oh its funny ... Go and take rest your back must be aching

Me: Babe stop being jealous but your cute though

Him: I'm not

Me:Fine I'll sleep with you but I don't like it because we are at your parents house

Him:Wanna go (giving me those eyes and lifting his eyebrows)

Me: no let's sleep pls

Him: Sleep? Oh no I got something way better than sleeping right now(kissing my neck)

Me:I'm not in the mood really let's sleep

Him:I'll do all the work myself

Me: your crazy

(We carried on kissing)

- 
- 
- 

Christian POV

(I can't wait till Vee be mine because she belongs to me ... I'll get rid of anything on my way ...  
And I mean anything)

- Chapter 19 -

- 
- 
- 

Today its Lucy's trial

(I woke up I took a shower then went to my room I put on my black high rise jeans with white vest and pink stilleto then went downstairs)

Me:Hey Lucy

Her:(with a low note) hey Vee

Me:Don't be down my Angel it will all go OK ok?

Her:Ok

Me:ok

Her:

Me: See? your laughing

Her:So many OK's

(We were laughing then the whole family came downstairs including Angela)

Henry: So Angela how long are you planning to live here

Her: Not for a while Sir

Henry: Ohw

Me:Uhmhm Angela pls pass me the sauce pls

(With those eyes of hers I'm not scared of her at all ... She passed it...We ate then went to court the whole Family you'll be shocked what Sam said on the stand...so we were all seated his Family was here and we were also here...)

Lucy:I'm so scared

Ava:Its ok

Me:You'll be fine you'll do good

(Then Lucy was called to the stand to say his side of the story she was asked questions by Sam's lawyer Mr Brain)

Him:Miss Ellis pls take us to the night you were with Mr Brown

Her:We were at a motel Sir

Him:Did he force you to go?

Her: No Sir

Him:Has he ever been aggressive towards you ?

Her:No Sir

Him:Were you always feel safe when he's around

Her:Yes Sir

Him:Has he ever made you feel uncomfortable?

Her:(A tear escape her eye) No Sir

Him:Have you ever slept with anyone before

Her:(She cried her voice was crumbling) No Sir

Him:Did you have any bruises that showed he violeted you

Her:N\_\_o Si\_\_r (my heart was breaking she can't even talk probably)

Him:Why didn't you go to the police to report him?

Her: (crying) I was scared and embarrassed no one knows how I felt ok

Sam:I did

(Everyone in court was shocked)

"Sit down Son" (He's Father shouted o guess he looked angry)

Sam:I'm sorry Lucy (he went on he's knees) I know what I did was wrong (Lucy's eye's were filled tears...Jake wanted to go there)

Me:(whispering to he's ears) DON'T YOU EVEN THINK ABOUT IT(he looked at me with anger then I looked at Lucy and Sam)

Sam:Pls find it in your heart to forgive me ... I heard you got pregnant I'm so sorry but pls keep this baby i wanna be part of he's life too ... I'm sorry pls forgive me ... Pls (he was also crying) there is not a single passes without me thinking about what i did to you

(Then he stood up and faced us all)

Sam:I'm really sorry Mr Ellis and Mrs Ellis what I did to your daughter is unforgivable I get it if you don't want to forgive me ... I deserve everything that comes my way everything your hatred and Lucy's hatred ... I ruined your lives and her life too and my little brother's too bcz I know how much he loved Lucy and he still does he is the one that made me to confess ... I'm really sorry pls forgive me Lucy I beg of you

Judge: Pls arrest him

Sam:Lucy... Lucy pls pls

(Police were taking him and he was screaming)

Sam:Lucy plssss

(He left Lucy came running to me)

Lucy: Thank you Vee thank you so much

Me:(taping he's back) Shhh there's no need to thank me (everyone left the court wait did I just spot the nurse here? Maybe I'm imagining things)

Ava:I'm happy for you Sis (we all did a group hug)

- 
- 

Henry's POV

Wife:See what if you taken the matter into your own hands?

Me:That boy would be dead now ... But I still want him dead don't mess around here

Wife: Stop being so stubborn

Me:Leave me alone Cecilia

(I saw David here is Sam's Dad David if so David is Siviwe's uncle This is hell I tell you how am I going to explain this ... David is my biggest enemy I bet he saw me too after what his son did to my daughter we will forever be enemies FOREVER)

- 
- 
- 

Siviwe's POV

(We went to the house Lucy went to sleep)

Ava:Sam shocked me

Me:Girlfriend I never knew he would do that for the sake of Lucy's happiness and the baby

Jake:Yah yah stop gossiping go to bed (Ava ran upstairs to his room and everyone went to their rooms)

Me:I am not feeling sleepy

Jake: Of cause your not I want something better

Me:Jake no

Him:Jake yes

Me: its not funny

Him:ok fine let's sleep together pls

Me:Which part of I'm not sleepy you don't understand

Him:Let's go

(He dragged me to bed I slept on his chest he was leaning his head on the pillow he was talking on and on and on till I fell asleep)

•

•

•

- Continuation -

•

•

•

(I woke up it was 6 and Jake wasn't beside me)

Me:Jake? Jake? Babe

"At the bathtub" (yelling from the bathroom I went in)

Me:(I sat at the edge of the bathtub) Why weren't you answering me at first?

Him: You called me by my name

Me:Oh your crazy

Him:And I'm crazy enough to(he pulled me to the bathtub I was still on my jeans and I had my phone on my hand I was checking time on it)

Me:Jake my phone ahhhhh

Him:Where is it?

Me:Its fine don't worry

Him:I'm not

Me: Did hurt you

Him:You hurt my (looking at this front)

Me:(I got off him)oh I'm sorry ... Let me see (then my phone rang)

Me:Hello

"Its me Christian"

Me:Oh Christian hey

Him:Hey

Me:Where did you get my number?

Him: I have my ways

Me:Your ways huh

Him: Yes...ahhh so what are you doing

Me:I'm ahhh bathing

Him:Oh I think we should get together sometime

Me:Ohw yes sure yah

(Jake got of the bathtub)

Him:I'll see you then

Me:Sure I'll let you know

Him:Bye

Me:Bye

(I took off my clothes I wrapped myself with a towel?)

Me:Jake?

Him:...

Me:Babe

Him:...

Him:...

Me:Ok what do you want me to do let me see does it hurt much

Him:No it doesn't hurt Vee ... Of cause it hurts

Me:At least you know how it feels being hurt there huh

Him:What? Oh pls

Me:Yes yes I said let me see

Him:No no

Me:Why not

Him:Why do you care you were busy with your "best friend"(coping my voice)

Me:I do not sound like that

Him:Well close enough

Me:Christian is a friend stop being jealous

Him:Why not

Me:Cause he's a friend and I didn't get when Angela showed up here out of nowhere(I was making my way to the door)

Him: What about my dick huh?

(He's Mom walked in while he was saying that I got shocked my towel fall off)

Me:Ahhh Ma'am

Her: (he's jaws were dropped looking at Jake and Me then she looks at Jake then again to me)  
I'm sorry (she left)

Me:See what you've done?

Him:Me? Your the one who dropped your towel ... You look sexy though babe

Me:Really Babe?

Him:Ahhh so hot

Me:Ohw stop it ... what am I saying .. Look that is not the point I'm a woman she wasn't shocked about me naked you said something about your dick and were half naked she thought

(We both said these words with shock)

" We slept together "

Him:I have to explain this to her

Me:Yes go

(He opened the door she standing outside the door)

Her: Oh you two do you always fight over little things (she walked in)

Me: We were not fighting

Her: What were you doing then?

Me: Ahhh discussing

Him: yes and its not what it looks like

Her: Its ok to have excitement in your lives besides your still young and beautiful but you'll have plenty of time to do that I mean look at me and my husband were still getting it on

Me:

Jake: Oh Mom pls

Her: And our sex life is good I can see yours too

Me: Oh no were haven't

Her: Keep lying to yourself ... Dinner is served

Me: I'm not hungry

Her: What are you hungry for that? (pointing at Jake's private part)

Me: What? no no

Jake: Mom go will join you now

Her: Ok but hurry up do a quickie if you have too the food is getting cold

Me: Ok

(She left)

Me: Your Mom is so funny

Him: She's not

Me: what don't be embarrassed

(We got dressed we went to the stairs laughing he was tickling me)

Me: No n\_\_o

Him:

Ava: You two are happy

Me:He wad tickling me

Cc:Jake your really quick done already

Jake: Mom

(I laughed he's so embarrassed he's chicks are getting pink)

Henry:What happened?

(Our eyes were popped out)

Cc:Oh nothing much he was still at the shower

Henry: Oh

(This woman though my stomach hurts because of laughing Angela is not pleased  
at all I won't please her)

.

(Then I had a disturbing call)

Me:Hello

Caller:...

Me:...Is there anyone here

(I only heard someone breathing I dropped it)

Jake: Who was that?

Me:I don't know

(My phone rang again)

Me:Speak up will you

"Sophia its me ohw I mean Siviwe its me Zoe"

Me: Ohw Zoe how are you

Zoe:Great you?

Me:Amazing

Zoe:I was just calling to check up on you

Me:No I'm good actually my head is good than before

Zoe:I'm happy to hear that ... Ok bye

Me:Bye

(We dropped the call)

Jake:Who was that?

Me:Zoe she just called "Sophia" (Henry and Cecilia got shocked by their drinks)

Me:Oh sorry are you ok?

Henry:Yah yah (coughing)

Cc:Yep(coughing)

Jake:Who's Zoe?

(We all looked at him)

Him:What I'm asking

Lucy: Are you gonna ask everything?

Austin: When a man is overprotective he's in love

Lucy:Ohhhh

Ava:Ohwww

Jake: Shut up

Me:Its the nurse who got me those headache pills

Jake:Ohhh

Me:Its strange she called me Sophia

Ava:Maybe she got the words mixed up

Lucy:Yah

Me:Uhhmm yah maybe

- 
- 
- 

- Chapter 20 -

- 
- 
- 

(I'll forward it to 4 weeks later)

(I was chilling with all my girls just having fun then Jake called)

Me:Hey babe

Him:Hey I forgot some papers in my room can you pls get them for me pls

Me:There's no need to beg ... Ok I'll be there ... Where are they

Him:I don't remember sweetie but look for'em

Me:Sure ok

(I went to his room I saw them I took them so I walked to the door)

Sia: And where are you going

Me:Jake forgot some of his papers here he said I should lend them to'em

Sia:Can I go pls

Me:If you'll drive me

Sia:Ok

(We got in the car then she drove off after a little while we arrived we got in then went to his office I found him with some guy I guess its his friend)

Me:Hey

Guy:Hey

Me:I'm Siviwe this is my friend Sia

Sia:Hy

Guy:Hey I'm Erick Jakes best buddy since high school ... So your this famous "Vee"

Me: I guess

Erick:I've heard a lot about you

Me:I hope good things

Him:of cause good things but I didn't know you have such a beautiful friend

Sia:Oh wow thank you

Me:We better run ...

Sia:To where Vee I was still enjoying this gentleman's company

Me:We need to be somewhere ... Here are the papers

Erick:I hope I see you again Sia

Sia:Sure

Me:Excuse us

(We left)

Sia:And then?

Me:Why were you flirting with him?

Sia:I wasn't I was being nice

Me:Being nice yah right let's go

Sia: You didn't say Jake has a hot friend

Me:I didn't know

Sia: ok I'll stop talking

Me: Pls do

•

•

Jake's POV

(At work ... Erick already left I'm alone in my office)

"hey"

(I lifted my head)

Me:Angela your still here I thought you left since you moved out of the house

Her:(She took a sit) No not at all I'm here to stay

Me:Oh is that right

Her:Yes besides that Vee girl doesn't give it to you like I can

Me:Don't you even mention her

Her: Come on Jake who are you fooling here? Me or yourself? I'm the only girl who knows you who completes you (she sat on my desk facing me)

Me:I love her

Her: You don't love her Jake you don't if you love her what do you love about her?

(Words couldn't come out like I was mute)

Her:Silent just like I thought you don't love her you never did you were asexually attracted to her (touching my face) yes I won't lie that she has a great body and beautiful but I (laughing then she went down my chest to unbuttoned my shirt) I on the other hand I'm me I have everything you need in a woman I'm all the package ... I'm the woman you chose to be the Mother of your child (she reached for a kiss she tried to kiss me I stood up on time I went to the door I opened it)

Me:That was all before I met her now leave I'll never betray the woman I love

Her:Huh (she walked to me) of course Jake but you will be mine again that I promise you

(She left)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

Sia:What if that woman is trying to steal your man away from you

Me:A real man can't be stolen

Sia:True that... But be careful

Me:I love Jake and he loves me plus I trust him he'll never betray me

Sia:O--k I was just asking

(Oh if he sleep with that tramp all hell will break loose he'll know the real me)

- 
-

•

David's POV

(I was walking to my room but I ears dropped on the conversation Jaden was on on the phone)

Him:...good person

Caller:...

Him:If it wasn't for Vee you wouldn't have reported him

(So someone was behind all of this)

Him: Thank Vee for me

Caller:...

Him:For setting the beautiful girl I love free

Caller:..

Him:Its ok I get it

Caller:...

Him:Ok Goodnight

(After he dropped the call I entered his room)

Me:Hey

Him: Hey Dad

Me: I saw at court an unusual girl called Vee who is her

Him: She's Jake's girlfriend Lucy's older brother

Me:Oh she is the one who reported the case?

Him:Yes why you ask that?

Me:Nothing

(I left him I went to my room...oh so this Vee girl is tough huh ... Hmmm who is she? I have to find out)

•

•

•

Vee's POV

(I'm asleep in my room Jake was with me but I'm having a terrible dream its like I'm sinking in an ocean and I'm screaming for help and there is someone looking down at me but not helping me I'm struggling I can't swim

... I can't move I'm drowning HELP!!!HELP!!!HELP!!! No one can hear me I'm sinking I'm drowning I'm out of breath ...after that I saw Mom underwater just looking at me .... Then I woke up)

Me:MOM (I screamed)

Jake:(Jake woke up too) What? Shhhh (I was crying and sweating)Shhh it was a dream (he hugged me)

Me: I saw Mom I felt her presences and I was drowning in water in the ocean and ... and (I broke down I couldn't say no more)

Jake:Sleep Babe it was all a bad dream (he put on his chest)

Me:It felt so real

Jake:Don't say no more sleep my love

•

•

•

To be continued....

- Continuation -

•

•

•

(I hardly slept so its Sunday today I woke up and Jake was in the Shower I just couldn't stop thinking about my dream what is Mom trying to tell me then my phone rang)

Me:Hello

Caller:...

Me:Who's this huh?

Caller:...

Me:F'stek sbhanxa (Piss off idiot ...I dropped the call)

Jake:Hey baby how are you feelin?

Me:Oh hayi khandiyeke (oh pls leave me alone ... I covered myself with the covers)

Him:You know I didn't hear you right

Me:Your leaving me (under the covers)

Him:I have to go to work

Me:But its Sunday

Him:I know my love

Me:Whatever go

Him:But your mad at me

Me:I'm not (I got out of bed I put on my jeans oh my clothes are tight now)

Him: I like that?

Me:Wha

Him:The struggle you go through when putting on your jeans its so sexy

Me:I am not feeling ok ok?

Him:(He walked to me and gave me a hug from the back then kisses my back) Stay a little longer

Me:Who said I'm going?

Him: Oh your not

Me:Of cause I am

Him:Pls stay

Me:Stop doing that it tickles I'm not falling for that ahhh stop I'm not in the mood  
Jake

Him:Pls my love

Me: Once once Jake once

Him:Sure but that depends

Me:Let's leave it then

Him:Ok fine once (he kissed me we kissed then I got a really strange feeling like I wanted to throw up I pushed him away I ran to the toilet I threw up)

Him:Babe are you ok?

Me:I'm not pls take me to Zoe

Him:Sure baby no problem let's go

(We left)

Ava: Vee what happened what happened to her Dad?

Lucy: Can we come?

Jake:Go I don't wanna argue

(We left )

Me:I want to be treated by Zoe ok)

Jake:Yes yes

( the car was flying all the way)

Me:Jake I know I'll die sooner or later but pls don't make it sooner slow down I'm not dying

Him:What if you are?

Ava: How are you feeling Vee?

Me:Girls i just threw up that's all and got a little dizzy

Jake:A little? You got unconscious

Me: A little

Lucy:Let's not argue were here

(We got in Jake carried me)

Me:Your so dramatic I can walk

Jake:Your stubborn even if your sick ... What else I don't know about you?

Lucy: Hy were looking for Zoe

Me:She's my nurse

Assistant: Ok (she called her then she got here)

Zoe:What happened?Pls come this way

(They all followed)

Zoe:You all stay here she's in good hands

(We got in her room)

Zoe:Pls lie down

(I did)

Zoe:So what happened?

Me:I vomited this morning

Zoe:Did you eat something or what?

Me:No not at all

Zoe:Maybe last night or?

Me:I ate the usual

Zoe:Ok before vomiting did you feel any pain else where or anything strange?

Me:Well I woke up with a mood and pissed maybe it was a terrible dream I had last night

Zoe:And then?

Me:Then my boyfriend wanted to make love while we we're about too I started to feel weird then I rushed to the toilet

Zoe:So that was your boyfriend

Me: Yes

Zoe:So when your intimate with your Boyfriend you use protection

Me:(Wait a what? We never used that I slept with Jake many times but never used protection what are you trying to same Ma'am)

Zoe:Vee...vee? Vee?

Me:Huh?

Zoe: You never used protection?

Me:N---o oh shit what does that mean? I've dated that guy for 2 months now I will bare him a

child oh God

Zoe:We're not sure yet

Me:Oh pls my God

Zoe:Ok I'll check you

(She did her work I was so scared oh God after 30 minutes she was done)

Zoe: The results are in

Me:(I took the papers) WHAT? (The results I got I didn't even know how to feel smile or cry)

Zoe:Ok were done here

(We left ...in the car)

Lucy:So what happened?

Me:Nothing

Jake:Nothing ... What did the Doctor say?

Me:Its what I ate that's all

Ava:Ohw but you didn't eat this morning

Me:Yah it's just what I ate last night did stay well on my tummy

Jake: Why are you brushing your tummy? Does it hurt?

Me:No (I looked at him) never been better

(We arrived Jake went to finished getting ready for work and Ava went to eat)

Lucy:Something is up with you

Me:What psh no I'm fine

Lucy: (she hugged me) I love you no matter what OK

Me:Oh thank you (I got in my room I took a shower wore my red dress with white sandles ...  
Jake left)

- 
- 
-

Angel's POV

(I walked in Jake's office after him)

Me: Hello there

Him:What do you want here woman?

Me:(I sat on his lap) come on babe

Him: Get off me and don't baby me

Her:I know you want this (I kissed him he kissed me back I put his hands on my ass oh I've missed those lips and they still the same as I left them still sweet and soft ...)

Him:Stop it Angela

Me:No (I changed the way I was sitting in him I sat in a position so I can face him in the eyes then I kissed him I put his hands on my ass then I moved so he could get hard yet he did we were kissing on and on and on with no passion but with desire bcz we desire each other then he became the beast I remembered he was ... Now thats a Jake I know ...

•

•

Vee's POV

(I took a cab to town first I shopped for a few items then went straight to Jakes office)

Assistant:He's with someone Ma'am

Me:A client?

Her:A friend

Me:Its ok (Maybe its Erick I entered...)

•

•

•

To be continued...

- Chapter 21 -

•

•

•

Me: Jake

(He turned the chair then stood up I looked at his assistant)

Me:A friend huh?

Jake:Baby I'm sorry

(I told myself that if he cheats on me like I'll make a huge scene but no ... I threw what I bought on his face then left ... How could he do this how could he? He was following me and saying sorry ... I got in a cab then left)

•

•

•

Jake's POV

(What have I done? I went to my office again ... I took what threw at me ..)

Me:She's pregnant ... My babe is having a baby

Angela: What?

Me:You get out

Angela:But we just...

Me:Get out NOW!!!

Angela:Ohhwk

(She left I closed the door...I looked at the gifs it was a box and the results from Zoe dammit Jake you blew ... I opened the box it was a cute pair of baby shoes and other stuff for a baby well I don't know what are they ... Thats the beautiful way to say your pregnant I have to apologise ... I took the gifs I walked out)

Me:Cancel all my meeting Sheron I have family problems

Her:Yes Sir

(I drove home)

•

•

Vee's POV

(With tears falling down my cheeks I went straight to my room I packed all my things IM LEAVING I was sobbing ... Lucy came to me)

Her:Vee what are you doing?

Me:I'm leaving

Her:But... But why?

Me:Its complicated Lucy

Her:I'm worried Vee

Me:Don't be its not for the baby

Her:Did you got in a fight with Jake bcz he can be a jerk sometimes

Me:Let's just leave it

"Give us space Lucy"

(He's here and I'm burning with anger)

Him: Let me explain

Me: Explained?Jake explain what I saw? It was perfectly clear to me

Him:I love you ...and I'm happy your caring my child ...pls stop packing... Babe

Me:Don't Babe me

(I went to him)

Me:You were kissing her your hands were on her ass she was grabbing your face and kissing you .... Like there's no tomorrow ... Go back to her ... I don't care but I'm leaving..

Him:Babe I'm sorry pls forgive me pls stop packing pls stop

(I was done packing I took my bags downstairs he was following me)

Him:Vee pls

(I walked out of the door went to Sia's apartment with my bags I knocked she opened)

Her:Vee (she hugged me she took the bags inside for me I was crying ... She made coffee we sat down)

Her:What happened?

Me:I saw him kissing Angela (I broke down she hugged me and brushed my back)

•

•

Jake's POV

(Shit Jake shit ... Shit shit shit damn)

Ava:And then?

(They both crossed there arms and looked at me)

Me: Not in the mood man

(I went to my room I slept thinking about What I did ... Vee's pregnant even worse but I'm happy that she's carrying my child ... I woke up at 6 went to eat dinner)

Me: Hey everyone

Mom:isn't Vee hungry?

Me:...

Ava:She left

Mom:What?

Dad:WHAT?

Austin: What?

Dad:When?

Mom:Why?

Lucy: This afternoon we don't know why

Mom:Jake?

Dad:Did you too got in a fight?

Me:kinda

Mom:Kinda?

Me: Yah Mom jeez (I wasn't in the mood really)

Dad:What happened?

Me:She saw me and Angela making out at my office

Ava:With that so called "mother" of mine

Austin: Ouch Man you blew it

Me:(Angry)You think that I don't know that I didn't mean it to happen I didn't mean to hurt her ... Especially if I knew she's pregnant with my baby

Mom:That explains the arguments

Lucy:I knew it

Ava:You knew?

Dad:What?

Austin: You go Brother

Me: Yes she's pregnant do you see how stressed I am ... She'll never forgive me ... And I can't justify what I did ..(I went to my room)

- 
- 
- 

Henry's POV

(That makes me and David family ... Vee left who will protect her now if David kills her he kills my grandchild too ... I can't let that happen)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

Me:Thanks for letting me crash in

Her:Your my girlfriend its no problem

Me:I have to tell you another think ... I'm pregnant

Her:What?

Me:I'm preg...

Her:I heard what you said (she screamed

Ahhhh )congratulations

Me: Thank you

Her: I can't believe it I'll be a Godmother

Me:Yah

Her:Do you remember not wanting Jake look at you smiling

Me:I don't now

Her: Even if Jake hurt you .. You still love him ... Good night I'm going to bed

(I don't love him ... Oh Jake who am I kidding I still love him I still do .. Of cause I do ... )

- 
- 
- 

- Continuation -

- 
- 
- 

(I went to sleep ... My phone was off the whole day ... I slept with tears running on my cheeks then I had a disturbing dream again ... Its like I'm running but I'm running in circles and I can't reach my destination I'm crying I'm tired this place is dark .. I'm screaming but no one is helping I doubt there are any ppl ... Then a thought came to my head "why are you crying? Why are you running? What scares you? Stop STOP and See's what will happen" I did as mind was telling me then saw a person wearing white clothes coming towards me ... Its a woman ... Is that Mom?... She said {Don't be afraid my child I'm with you} Then she faded

{Me:Mom Mooooom} but it was too late she disappeared ... But Mom I know it was you ... Then I opened my eyes)

Me:Mom (it was a dream) Oh a dream

(I prayed then slept peacefully)

- 
-

•

Angel's POV

(I called Christian)

Me:Tik tok Tik tok Lover boy your time is running out

Him:Spill the beans Angela and stop beating around the bush

Me:Guess who's having a Baby? (I laughed )

Him:Talk Angela (he was so angry)

Me:Your long lost love is PREGNANT

Him:Noway

Me:I was just telling you Mr C

(He dropped the call...Now I'll just sit back and enjoy whatever happens .. I took a sip on my red wine ... )

•

•

•

Vee's POV

( Rise and shine ... I woke up I called sick I'm not feeling like posing for a camera today and I have to tell them I'm pregnant I hope I don't lose my job bcz my body is what I get paid for...I went to the kitchen I made breakfast)

Sia:Morning

Me:Morning

Sia:You already woke but you need rest

Me:No I don't

Sia:Your not planning on going to work are you?

Me:What? Of cause not

Sia: Good

Me:Bacon?

Sia:Pls and eggs pls

Me:Ok ...ewwww they smell horrible are they rotten?(I put on a disgusted face)

Sia: No they are fine ... Let me do them ... Do you want them?

Me:Oh no thanks I'm going to wash my face thank you

(I went to wash my face then rinse my mouth ... I looked at myself in the mirror ... I saw a beautiful young woman who is full of life but has a shattered soul who is broken ... I went to the kitchen ... We ate breakfast then she went to work ... I cleaned the house,I cooked then watched movies I put on Logos I was laughing non stop then I heard a knock ... I was wearing my grey tracksuit with grey socks it wasn't hot either cold but since I wasn't feeling too well so yah...I went to open the door)

Me:Ohhhh God

Angela:Vee girl

Me:What do you want (she sat down I closed the door)

Her:That isn't the right way to welcome a guest Vee

Me:Get out

Her:we bare Jake a child and...

Me: Get straight to the point woman

Her:All I'm trying to say is no matter you give birth to that monster of yours he's still MINE

Me:He doesn't love you

(She got close to me)

Her:Doesn't he? If he didn't love me he would have never kissed me in his office

Me:He loves me only me

Her:(she whispered in my ear) When he makes love to you does he moarn like a beast? Does he hold you so tight under the sheets till you feel like your tearing apart? Does he makes love to you so hard like your getting out of breath? Like its the last time you'll ever be his? Does he makes love to you till he whisper in your ears "I'LL NEVER STOP LOVING YOU"? If he never then he still loves me

Me:(Tears where falling off my cheeks) Get out (I was screaming) GET OUT GET OUUUUUUUT (I threw her out...I cried so much I kept on crying on and on and on how could i ever be so stupid a man like Jake love me ... What I was thinking )

(Then I slept crying after some time I heard a knock again oh I have a huge headache I don't

need drama)

" Baby"

(I slammed the door on his face)

Him:Baby wait pls let me in so we could talk about this

Me:Go away I'm not interested

Him:I'm on my knees pls

Me:I don't care Jake Go

Him:I'm begging you

(Vee he's bagging come on hear him out ... My inner thoughts said ...)

Me: Get up and come in

Him:Thank you

(I closed the door)

Him:I'm sorry pls don't push me away

Me:Do you love me?

Him:Of cause baby of cause I do (he got close to me then look me in the eyes his hands were on my waist)

Me:Do you love her?

Him:There is no her

Me:I'm not playing here Jake ...ARE YOU STILL INLOVE WITH ANGELA?

(He didn't answer)

Me:Answer me dammit(I shouted)

Him:Its complicated

Me:(I hit his chest)Complicated?

Him:Babe I'm so...

Me:Get the fuck out ... Get out ...

Him:Vee pls

Me: You still love her ... you still do but how? Am I not enough for you?

Him: My love

Me: Don't call me that (I said with anger)

Him: Of course you're enough

Me: Listen to me listen very carefully ... I will not fight for you but I will fight for me and my baby ... Now get out

Him: Hunny pls

Me: Get out ...

Him: What you saw...

Me: What would have happened if I didn't show up? You would have fucked her

Him: Babe

Me: Get the fuck out (I felt pain in my tummy I screamed)

Him: Babe are you ok

Me: Don't touch me (oh shiiit its burning up I screamed) My baby

(He carried me to his Car)

Me: I said don't touch me

Him: Can you just stop being stubborn

(I don't want him to touch me kodwa I'm in pain I'll die stubborn)

Him: It hurts where?

(He was driving to the hospital)

Me: JUST DRIVE ahhhhh (the pain got stronger) Jake

Him: What? What's going on?

Me: (I cried) I'm bleeding

Him: What no no no

(Now at that exact moment my life flashed in front of my eyes I didn't know what was going on ... I see doctors I see ppl I see light ... Then everything became blank)

•

•

•

Jake's POV

(I called Erick first I told him everything then my Family...Erick got there on time)

Erick: Dude what happened

Me:Its a long story

(The Doctor came)

Him:I have terrible news ... The baby may die and she lives or she lives and the baby dies

(oh no my life crashed my world crumbled down)

•

•

•

To be continued...

- Chapter 22 -

•

•

•

Narrated

Let me explain why Vee can lose the baby ... Look these things happen since you all are the witnesses of Vee's life she's been through a lot ... She has been pregnant for over 4 weeks (sorry but I didn't announce that) anyhow it's possible for her to lose the baby due to stress (I was going to mention that) All I'm trying to explain is that a baby can be lost even in a 2-3 weeks some ppl say its just like you were never been pregnant ... I hope I made it clear I'm not good at explaining but I really hope I cleared some doubts ...

•

•

•

•

•

Jakes POV

•

(I couldn't speak I sat on a chair that was near me i couldn't believe my ears)

Erick:Doc isn't there any other way?

Doc:I'm afraid no Sir

Erick:Pls do anything you can to save her and the baby pls

Doc: I'm not promising

(He left)

Erick: Be strong Brother be strong

(The Family arrived)

Mom:Son what happened?

Erick: She may lose the baby or she may die then the baby lives

Ava:But that just can't happen?

Lucy:How long was she pregnant?

Me:4 weeks

Dad:Be strong Son you'll over come this

Me:Its my fault its all my fault

Austin: None of this is your fault

•

•

•

Vee's POV

(I don't know if I'm dreaming or what? But I'm in a blank room then a person wearing white clothes again appears

{Me:Mom is that you?

Her:Yes

Me:Mommy help me

Her:You left me Siviwe

Me:Mom

Her:You turned your back on me... You never visited me

Me:I'm so sorry Mom (crying)

Her:Why?

Me:I'm sorry it wasn't my attentions Mom

Her:I know ...

Me: Are you mad at me?

Her:What?No I would never get mad at you ...your my baby my only baby

Me:I'm pregnant Mom

Her:(smiling) I know ...I know your caring my grandson

Me:Grandson?

Her:Yes

Me:I'm fighting for my life and ... His as you just said

Her:I know

Me:I have a bad feeling I may lose my baby Mommy

Her:You won't

Me:Then what happened to me?

Her:When I was caring you too ...I had the same feeling

Me:What do you mean?

Her:I also bleed

Me:What caused it?

Her:It was stress ... Your stressed right now too right

Me:Yes .. Mom your not making sense what's that gotta to do with anything?

Her:Your stressed you think too much plus your dreams are hunting you down ... Your not going to lose the baby I'll make sure of it

Me:Explain here Mom balance me

Her:Don't mind the baby he will be fine ... But the is darkness coming after you

Me: But why?

Her:The answers you want are on yourself my child ...

Me:Mom your not helping

Her:I was here to save my grandson ...

Me:Mom don't leave

Her:Pls come visit me I miss you

Me:Mom pls don't go ... I need to ask you more ...MOM

Her:I'll always be with you

Me:Mom plsssss (she faded) pls don't go

(Then I heard Doctors talking)

"She stopped bleeding"

"What is happening? She's..."

"Opening her eyes"

"Were not losing her...come on ppl let's work"

(I opened my eye's)

Doc:You need to sleep for now were not done

(Then I slept again)

•

•

Jake's POV

Ava:Don't worry Father she'll fight this

(A Doctor pass us I stopped him)

Me:Doc how is she

Doc:She woke but put her to sleep again ..

Me:The baby?

Doc:Were still saying the baby

(He left God I'll never forgive myself if anything happens to any of'em )

- 
- 
- 

(Time flew still no news I'm panicking here)

Dad:Son calm down

Me:How can I Father? How can I?

Dad:Find it in your heart Son but after this you and I have to have a little chit chat

(Then he left )

(Then Doctor came)

Doc:We were able to save them

Me:Thank God ... Is she awake?

Doc:No but anyone who wants to see her can go in but one person

Me:Me I will go

Doc:Very well follow me

(I followed him we got in I saw her laying in there my heart broke into count less Peace's)

Me:What caused the bleeding Doctor?

Doc:This woman is stressed I know it doesn't happen often but saving her and the baby was a miracle

Me:Thank you Doc

(He left ... It's all my fault I put you in this position)

Me:I'm sorry my love ...pls forgive me ..pls (I touched her tummy) I wish this can be a boy you know ... I'd love that pls forgive me I want to be in my babies life (I held her hand) I'm sorry about

what I did ... I love you only you... You just made me realise that ... You're the only woman for me  
pls forgive me (tears came running to my Cheek's ... I laid my head on her bed (after some time  
she squeezed my hand I woke)

Me:My love

(She opened her eyes then smiled)

Her: Hey

Me:(crying and smiling to her)Hey

Her:Don't cry

Me:Why not I almost lost you my love

Her:(she smiled) I'm ok my baby is OK too

Me:Our baby

Her:Yes our baby but I haven't forgave you

Me:Baby...

Her:Shhh I will not be fooled by you again ... You will be in my babies life but NOT MINE

Me:But...

Her:I won't repeat myself Jake

Me:Ok (How can I ever make it up to her and show her how sorry I am )

- 
- 
- 

To be continued...

- Continuation -

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

Me:Thank you

Him:For what?

Me:Saving us

Him:There's no need to thank me I love you both

(He left it broke my heart to see him cry )

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

Ava:Is she awake?

Me:Yes she's fine

Mom:Go and get some rest Son

Me:Yes

(We all left I took a shower home then took a nap after some time I woke up ... I couldn't stop thinking about Vee what I feel for her is outer this world but what I'm feeling for Angela too is something else ... Erick entered my room)

Him: Brother

Me:Brother help me here

Him: Sure

Me: Is it possible to love two women at the same time?

Him: Are we talking about Vee and Angela?

Me: Yes

Him: I asked you this before ... You never gotten over Angela

Me:I thought I did

Him: Brother what you feel for Vee is love true love but Angela she's the first woman you fell in love with and bare you a child ... But Vee is totally different shes pure gold if you lose her you lose it all ... If you don't know which women you should chose do this ... Imagine your life with Vee and imagine your life with Angela ... Which one can make you happy

Me:I love them both

Him:No you don't Vee completes your world even Ava Love's her what does she don't have that Angela have

Me: Angela gives me sex when ever I want

Him:That's it Brother ... Vee doesn't give you what you need sex that is ... But Angela can .. My point is your not going to be horny forever ... So Chose wisely

(He left ... How can I chose? How can I? ... Dad entered my room)

Dad:Care to explain what happened?

Me:Dad not now

Dad:Look Son don't let your mind confuse you

Me:I'm not confused

Dad:I've seen the way you look at Angela and I've seen the way you look at Vee too ...

Me:Father I...

Dad:Vee is the woman of your dreams not Angela don't make remind you what she did

(He left...What the hell am I going to do?)

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

Me:She's pregnant even better

(I'm on my phone with one of my right hand man Max)

Max: Oh a strange thing is happening

Me:Tell me

Max:Your Sister is entering her room

Me:Zoe?

Max:Yes

Me:Maybe she's doing her job she's nurse you know

Max:She's not wearing as a nurse

Me: What? Where does she know her?

Max: I don't know Sir

Me: Inform me if anything happens... And tell me how long will she stay there

Max: Yes Boss

(I dropped the call ... What is going on here... I smell trouble )

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(I was just staring at space when Zoe entered my room)

Me: Zoe

Her: Vee how are you feeling

Me: Fine I guess

Her: I'm happy for you I also have a daughter I would be hurt if anything happened to your baby and you too

Me: Well my feelings are the only thing hurt

Zoe: We all go through betrayal and we survived

Me: What's your Daughter's name?

Zoe: Kate

Me: Did Kate's father betray you?

Zoe: Yes...he said I wasn't enough for him anymore that I'm not satisfying him like before

Me: Did he know you were pregnant?

Her: Yes he knew but didn't care

Me: I'm sorry (I held her hand)

Her: Your lucky very lucky you have a very caring boyfriend and supports you

Me: Thanks

Her:Oh I better run my Daughter needs me

Me:Bye

Her:Bye take care

(She left ... I don't want my baby to grow up without a father bcz I know the pain)

•

(Time pass I slept till morning)

Me:Jake?

Him:Your awake ... Hey

Me:Did you sleep here

Him:Not really spent the whole night looking at you starring at you

Me:You need to be at the office

Him:I need to be with you

(Sia entered rushing caring things)

Sia:Morning morning ...oh Jake you look terrible... Vee my friend its ok if your mad at me I wasn't here yesterday

Me:Your here now its ok

Sia: Look I brought you something

Me:Chocolate

Sia:Yes and look?

Me:My favourite thank you

Jake:I too bought you Chocolate

Me: Thanks Jake ... Thank you Sia I kissed her cheek bye I have to go Boss left so I had a lot of work

Me: Go girl I know how hard is that job

Sia:Take care of my princess ok

Me:Who said its a girl?

Sia:I can feel it

Me: go

(She left in a hurry)

Jake: I didn't get a kiss?

Me: Why are you even here?

Jake: Bab...

Me: Don't call me that

Jake: Vee..Vee I'm trying here pls

Me: Help me to go to the bathroom pls and stop being cheesy

(I was wearing Hospital gown's)

Him: ok

(I got off the bed my feet catch the cold of the hospital tiles)

Me: Ahhh cold

Him: Its tiles were these

(He put on my sleeper's... He helped me to the bathroom then I did my business then went to lie down)

Him: Do you think its a boy?

Me: I don't know

Him: Don't you want a boy?

Me: I do

Him: Me too so I can play with him soccer teach him cricket and take him to games and have Son and Dad time and his Mom if she wants to (he said that tickling me)

Me: Ok stop

Him: There is that smile (smiling at me ...oh this guy) I love to see you smile I want him to have your smile so ladies can be charmed when he smiles

Me:

Him: Like I am charmed now

Me: Oh Jake

Him:I was just saying

Me:I want him to have your eyes

Him:(he chuckled) why's that?

Me: Its where I looked the first time I fell in love with you

Him: The first day we kissed

Me:Yes

Him:I still can't believe were here now

Me:Me2

(Christian entered)

Christian: Morning

Us:Morning

Christian:These are for you

Me:Flowers they are beautiful

Jake:They are Roses ... Do you love Roses Christian?

Christian: Yes a lot and of cause they are beautiful they match her beauty

Me:Oh thank you so much

Christian: I'm happy your fine

Jake: Who told you?

Christian:Told me what?

Jake: That she was in hospital?

Christian: I went to her work yesterday to see her and the guy Kevin told me but didn't tell me why

Me:Jake pls

Jake: Oh she's pregnant with my baby

Me:I think that is obvious that its yours

Christian: Oh well congratulations to you both

Me:Thanks Christian

Jake:Thank you

Christian: Well I better run I'll be late for work

Me:Bye thanks for stepping by

Him:Pleasure

(He left)

Me: Same to you Mr Ellis

Him:I'm not going to work till you get discharged

Me:Oh God so how long will I keep up with you here

Him:Till you get discharged

Me:God have mercy

- Chapter 23 -

- 
- 
- 

Me:Sooo you've been here for the whole day ... Don't you like need time alone

Jake:No

Me:No? Like to take a bath

Him:Do you want me to leave?

Me:No no it's just...

Him:So you want me to stay? (Smiling)

Me:Not that either

Him:Come on Vee

Me: Don't "come on" me

Him:I don't want my baby to have your temper

Me: Why not?

Him:You always angry all the time

Me:What?

Him:Yes

Me:I will strangle you Jake

Him:Oh come on you barley can walk yourself to the bathroom

Me:You didn't just said that

Him:Sweetie chill out (touching my hair

Me:Get your filthy hands of me(pushing him)

Him:I love you when your mad

Me:Mxm

Him:Ohwww

(I was so pissed asf)

Him: are you really serious

Me:What do you think?

Him:Your not for real but its ok I know your...

Me: My what don't even say that its Bcz I'm pregnant

Him:I think so

(I was beating his chest)

Me: You piss me off

Him: Ohw that hurts

Ava: Hey hey hey you guys will kill each other

Me:He started it

Him: No you did

Me:Me?What?

Him:Yes you

Ava:Ok OK ok it doesn't matter who's fault is it ok?

Me:Its his any way

Him:Yours

Ava:Do you guys always fight over little things?

Me: He always to be blame for every fight

Him:No it was one time

Me:Ahhh no all of'em

Him:Oh no no no you always start fights

Me:What are you trying to say Mr Ellis?

(Ava was so annoyed)

Ava:Guuuuuys

Us:What?

Ava:Pls stop

(I rolled my eyes at him)

Him: Did you see that? Did you? she just rolled her eyes at me

Me:What no I didn't

Ava:Vee I came to give you this

Me:Oh thank you

Ava:I would love to stay but I couldn't handle this ... Bye and pls don't kill each other

Me:He wants to kill me

Him: No you

Ava:Bye arggg

(She left)

Him:Can I have some

Me:Have what?

Him:The fruit

Me:Ohhh no no no its mine

Him:But...

Me: But nothing ... Go home and eat take a shower and sleep you look horrible

Him:Just a banana

Me:We are 2 here pls don't make me strangle you

Him:I'm leaving... Hope your happy

Me:I am

Him:Bye I love you

Me:What?

Him:I said I love him the baby

Me:Oh

Him:(he looked at me)

Me:What?

Him:Your beautiful

Me:Get out

Him:Fine I'm getting out

(He left )

•

•

•

David's POV

Max:Boss her boyfriend left she's alone

Me:Don't do anything yet I still want to know what Zoe was doing there

Max:How can I find that out Boss?

Me:Leave that to me for now don't touch her in fact leave there

Max:Yes Boss

•

•

•

Christian's POV

(I'm with Angela)

Her:Who is this mysterious woman you said is helping you?

Me:It doesn't concern you ... Your job is to win Jake over then I'll take care the rest

Her:I'm trying too he ignores my calls

Me:Well try harder woman

Her:But you know very well that they love each other Christian

Me:And I also love her

Her:I hope this doesn't back fire

Me:No it won't

Her:I really hope

Me:What are you scared for Angela for Jake to find out the truth

Her:What truth huh?(she was crying)

Me:Don't make me bring up the past my princess

Her:Jake will never find out the truth never I'm scared for the baby Vee is caring

Me:Nothing will happen now chill it's Jakes first born right?

Her:Shut up

Me:Oh that's why you hate Vee bcz she'll bare Jake a baby Jake's first born bcz Ava is not his daughter

Her:Fuck you Christian (she left )

•

•

•

Zoe's POV

(I'm talking to some nurse my friend)

Me:Pls do this pls

Her: Zoe if I get caught I can lose my job

Me:You won't pls do this DNA

Her:Ok fine

Me:When can I get the results?

Her: I'll do them now you can get them tomorrow noon

Me:Thank you

(Thank God I'll finally clear some doubts)

- 
- 
- 

Lucy's POV

(I went to see the Doctor for the scan)

Doc:Ok that's a heart beat can you hear it?

Me:(a tear escape my eye) Yes

Doc: Its going to be a healthy baby

Me:Pls I want the photos of the scan pls

Doc:No problem ... That's all for today ...wait a sec I have to print these

Me:Yes Doc

(He left then came back with the pictures in an envelop then I left to visit Sam I don't know why but I felt like to give him these)

- 

(So I waited for him in a dark room there in prison ahhh it Smell's horrible here)

Sam: Lucy?

Me:Sam

Sam:You came to visit?

Me:No sit down please

(We sat down)

Me:(I gave him the envelope)

Him:What's this?

Me:Open it

(He did then he cried it broke me)

Him:Its my baby?

Me: Yes

Him:Why your being nice to me?

Me:I'm not a evil person Sam and I won't cut you off at (I didn't want to say this but I did) our baby's life

Him:Oh you said "our"

Me:Yes

Him:I know I don't deserve your kindness but thank you

Me:its fine I better go now

Him:Wait...I'm sorry

(A tear escape my eye)

Me:I forgave you Sam a long time ago

(I left I went home)

Mom:Hunny where were you?

(I hugged her)

Me:I went to the Doctor

Mom:Is the baby OK?

Me:Yes Mom ... I did scan then took pictures

Mom:Really why didn't say so let me see

Me:No Mom I don't have them

Mom:Are you OK?

Me:I gave them to Sam I went to see him

Mom: Oh sweetie (she gave me a tight hug)

Me:I don't know what I was thinking(I cried)

Mom:No you did a right thing baby don't cry Shhh

Me:T--hanks Mom(my voice was shaking)

•

•

•

- Continuation -

•

•

•

Narrated

So its been a Week and and everything is going well on the Family Vee and Jake are getting closer and Jake is trying his best to win her over ...

•

•

•

Vee's POV

Sia: Where are you going

Me:To work

Sia:Why you just got out the hospital

Me:Oh Sia I can't stay here and stare at the walls either

Sia:Come on let me drive you

Me:Ohw wow thank ... Let me look at myself ... Sia am I getting fat

Sia:Huh?What?You?Fat? noooooo

Me:Pls be honest with me

Sia:No girlfriend nooo

Me:Siaaaaa

Sia:Ok fine a little

Me:Ohhhhw

Sia:Don't be sad your still beautiful

Me:You think

Sia:I know now come on let's go

(She drove me to my work place then she left ... I got in oh ppl were giving me nasty looks is it that bad ... I went to my Managers office)

Me:Hy

Him:Hey

Me:Look I can explain...

Him: Your late Vee

Me:Your not firing me?

Him:What no sweetie you will be in pregnant women section where you'll take photos with your belly huh?

Me:Uhhmm

Him:I mean you didn't sign that part if you don't want too it's ok

Me:No not at all but what if I get close to give birth while here

Him:Uhhh we have Doctors here well trained Doctors

Me:Ok

Him:So your taking it?

Me:Of cause I'm taking it

Him:Great

Me:So when can I start?

Him:We'll call whenever we want you ok? Bcz in your condition well in pregnant women conditions you have your needs so we can't let you work like any other models we have

Me:After giving birth what will I do?

Him:You'll go back to your regular job

Me:This is great

Him: Yes of cause

Me:Ok can I go now

Him: Yes yes

Me:Thank you (I left on my way to get a cab Jake called)

Me:Hey

Him:Hey you good?

Me:yah yah you?

Him:Vee where are you? Why its noisy there

Me:I'm going home I can't find cabs here arggg

Him:I told you whenever you need to go somewhere I'll drive you...where are you?

Me:Oh come on don't exaggerate I'm ok

Him:WHERE ARE YOU???

Me: In front of my work place

Him:I'm coming

Me:Hey hey hey I told you I'm fin...

(ti...ti...ti ...did he just hung up on me? After a few minutes he arrived like a crazy person he opened a door for me I got in he also got in he looked at me he didn't drive)

Me:I know I know I'm sorry I will call you next time

Him:There is no next time

Me:What?

Him:Yes (he drove off)

Me:Where are you taking me Jake?(I was so scared he was so angry at me)

Jake:you won't risk my baby's life ok?

Me:I'm sorry (I looked sad man this guy will kill me if I don't act now)

(He looked at me then he calmed down I was like yessssss tears always win)

Jake:Ok fine I'm sorry if I scared you ... Pls don't make me mad again

Me:(I dropped a tear) ok

Him:(He pulled the car over) Don't cry I'm sorry (he turned and faced me I faced him then he wiped my face) don't cry ok(I nodded) are you better now?(I nodded yesss tears always work ) give me a hug (ohw he's so sweet we hugged then we pulled we looked at each other then got closer then he kissed me I kissed him back but I pulled)

Me:I'm sorry

Him:No its my fault I'm sorry

(Ok that wasn't the plan at all)

Me:Drive pls where ever your taking me

Him:ok

(He looked so down ... What am I doing this guy is trying he's best to win me over and I'm pushing him away ... If I keep on doing this I'll lose him forever)

Him:Were arrived

Me:Isn't this...

Him:My house its ours now

Me:Ours? Oh no no no I'm not...

Him:Staying here

Me:Yes I'm not

Him:No I said your staying here

Me:What?

Him: Actually we staying here

Me:What noway

(He opened the garage he packed the car then went inside I followed him)

Me: Jake pls don't do this

Him: Will be here away from everyone

Me: But Jake...

Him: Remember our first night here?

Me: (The night we made love here I bet its the night I got pregnant) Yes

Him: (He got close to me) its the night we made love here our first night together

Me: I know that (I pulled him away)

Him: Vee? (I looked at him) don't you feel anything for me anymore?

(Of cause I do of cause I do)

Me: Why are you asking me that?

Him: I'm trying so hard Everytime I'm trying to get close to you you push me away ... Even the kiss we just shared ... I miss you I miss you so much

Me: Jake I...

Him: Don't say anything I know what your going to say (he went upstairs to the room...I followed him he was laying on his back on the bed)

Me: I do feel something for you (I sat next to him) I always did I never stopped not for a second ... But I'm scared Jake

Him: I will never hurt you again I promise you

Me: But Angela still loves you

Him: Well I don't love her I love you

Me: (I smiled)

Him: And there's also Christian too (he rolled his eyes)

Me: Don't roll your eyes I don't love Christian as a boyfriend I love him as s friend

Him: Well I don't love him at all

Me: You don't have too

Him: I really love you Vee and my baby

Me: I love you too and my baby

(We kissed)

Him:Do you remember...

Me:I remember

Him:I don't remember it clearly you know care to remind me?

Me:Oh not at all

(We kissed )

Me:Ahhh the baby kicked give me your hand

(He felt it)

Him:For the first time (he kissed my belly) Your going to be a champion ... He kicked bcz he felt his Father's presence

Me: Really?

Him:Yes and bcz this is where he was conceived

Me:You lie

(He kissed me again then me made love)

- 
- 
- 

Zoe's POV

(David entered at the door)

Me:Oh Mommy is not here

Him:I'm here for you

Me:Oh what do I owe the surprise visit ?

Him: Who is Siviwe?

Me:(Act dumb act dumb Zoe) She's one of our patients at work but she's mine actually

Him:Your friends with her?

Me:Yes I'm friends with every patient at work so I can relate to them...why are you asking me that ... What do you want on that girl

Him: Nothing

Me:I know the way you love young girls I still know what you did a long time ago Brother

Him: Shut up Zoe

Me:You slept with a young girl

Him:I said SHUT UP

Me:And impregnate her

(He slapped me)

Zoe:That's what you're capable of beating defenceless women ... Where is she?...You gave her money so she could disappear after that ... Your son took from you

(He walked away)

Me:If you lay a finger on Siviwe I'll kill you with my bare hands you animal

(He walked out of the door ... I swear I'll kill him...)

- 
- 
- 

- Chapter 24 -

- 
- 
- 

(It's the next morning)

(I woke up Jake wasn't around I called for him he wasn't answering ... Maybe he's downstairs ... I was about to walk out of the room when his phone rang I took it .. ANGELA ... I went downstairs I found him making breakfast)

Him:Hey you just ruined the surprise

(I gave him the phone then went to shower while he was answering ...)

Him: Babe it's not what it looks like

Me:I know I know

(I stripped naked to get in the shower then turned on the water)

Him:Ok I'll finish breakfast

(He left ... Ok I'll let this slid but I am a little jealous ... A little )

•

(After done showering I wore his T-shirt then went downstairs)

Him:Is suits you

Me:What did you talk about

Him:I told her not to call me again

(Christian called)

Him:Vee

Me:Christian (why is he calling me I don't want problems bonanje...Jake rolled his eyes and looked at me with suspension)

Him:Can we meet

Me:I can't Christian I'm with the Father of my Child

Him:Oh your back together

Me:Yes were back together

Him:Ohw it's good though especially for the baby

Me:Yah

Him:Uhm ok I better go

Me:Yah sure

(He dropped the call ... Jake dished for me...giving me the scary eyes)

Me:What? (Biting at a Bacon)

Him:Nothing

Me:Wait ... where does this food come from?

Him: ( I bought it

Me:When did you wake up?

Him:I don't remember but very early

Me:Why?

Him:I wanted to make breakfast for my baby

Me:Ohwww

Him: And apologise is it working?

Me:Totally

Him:Hmmm(he got close to me he kissed me I wrapped my legs around his waist)

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

(Talking to Max)

Me:Look find anything you can about this girl ... Her name is Siviwe Phola ..

I want more information about her ... I want to know everything and I mean everything

Max: Yes Boss

(He left there's something about this girl ... While I was in those thoughts a very beautiful lady walked to my house)

Me:Who are you?

Her: No one but I know you

Me: What do you want

Her:(She got close to me) I'm interested to the person your interested to

Me:And who's that

Her:Our worst nightmare Siviwe

Me:What do you know about her? And why she's my worst nightmare?

Her: (She laughed) Don't you know yet Mr Olive ... When she find's out about her past she will destroy you without even thinking twice

Me:What do you mean? Who is that girl?

Her:I told your worst nightmare

Me:Who are you?

Her: (she chuckled then walked out)

Me:How can I find you again

Her:(she stopped and looked at me) Don't worry Mr Olive I'll find you

(She left ... Who is that?)

- 
- 
- 

Angel's POV

(I will never forget what I did I don't deserve to be called a Mother that's why I chose Jake to raise her bcz he can raise her well and yet he did I can't get that night out of my head nor why I did it And Jake will never love me but my daughter can I'll try to win her love although I don't deserve it I know I don't)

- 
- 
- 

I'll continue later

- Continuation -

- 
- 
- 

(There's a new person in town ...so Jake took me to Sia's place to get my stuff he left me outside then he rushed to work we kissed goodbye he left...I bumped into this Guy)

Him:Sorry Miss

Me:Its ok I wasn't looking

(He lifted his head he looked at me with suspicious eyes then looked at my belly my belly was starting to show)

Me:What?(he ran away) Hey hey young man wait ... You dropped ...(he vanished) something (I looked at it its a very beautiful watch) And looks expensive too but he didn't look rich maybe he mugged it somewhere (arggg kids but I'll keep it just in case ... I went to Sia's apartment I found her on the phone but dropped it)

Me:You shouldn't have

Her:Why not...where were you?

Me:At Jakes

Her:What? Your back together?

Me:Yep

Her:I'm so happy for you (she hugged me)

Me:I'm moving in with him

Her:Ohw when

Me:Now

Her:...

Me:I know I'm sorry to leave like this its just he wants me close to him

Her:Yah sure I'm happy if your happy

Me:Your a good friend

Her:Your the best friend

(So I packed my things she helped me then she took me there then she left I got in ... I admired that watch its so beautiful and valuable how can I ever find the person who dropped it? ... Anyway I took a cab to the mall to do some shopping I went for groceries...so I saw beautiful baby toys for boys I wanted to get some but I was doubting it ...I was bending looking at the toys when a trolley hit me from behind)

Me:Ouch my ass

"Ow sorry Miss"

Me:You?

Him:You?

Me:Wow we should stop meeting like this

Him:Are you ok?

Me:Yah I'm fine

Him:I'm sorry

(He looked at me as if he knows me he smiled at me)

Me:Do I know you?

Him:(He put on a straight face) No no

Me:No no why did you give me that look this morning?

Him:I'm rushing somewhere Miss sorry Ma'am

Me:I'm not married "Miss"

Him:Sorry Miss

(Then a very beautiful young lady came to us)

Her:Hey baby I fou...Who's this?

Him:A woman I just met here

(They walked away)

Me:Hey

(They turned)

Me:You dropped this (I gave him it ... He left ... He's a strange man...I did my grocery shopping then went home I found Jake...he came to me running and hugged me)

Jake: don't ever leave like that inform me next time ok?

Me: I went to buy grocery baby that's not a big deal

Him:Don't scare me pls I'll keep you here I'll do grocery myself

Me:Jake I'm pregnant not sick

Him:Babe I'm scared you'll (he cuts himself) ... Just don't ok?

Me:(He looked worried) I'm sorry baby pls don't be mad at me

Him: I'm sorry its just I want you to be safe

Me:I am safe with you

Him:(he smiled at me) Of cause you are (we hugged)

Me:Oh I met a man today...

Him:Ohw

Me:Babe? Your not jealous are you? He's old enough to be my older Brother

Him:So do I

Me:Come on your not that old than me ...(he looked at me) ok fine a little but its not like that plus he has a girlfriend

Him:Fine talk

Me:After you dropped me off at Sia's a guy pass by me and dropped his watch a very beautiful valuable gold rare watch

Him:What makes you think its rare

Me:Baby you didn't saw it ... It was not like other watches

Him:Maybe it was a compass

Me:Very funny no it wasn't I know a compass ok

Him:Ok sorry talk

Me:then he looked at me with strange eyes as if he knows me then he ran I tried to tell him about his watch but he disappeared

Him:He was a ghost

Me:Let me finish jeez

Him:Sorry continue

Me:then I saw him at the mall today

Him:What a coincidence

Me:Yah then he looked at me with those eyes again then he's girlfriend arrived

Him:He didn't hurt you right?

Me:What? No why would he

Him:I don't know

Me:No first he bumped into me the second time his trolley bumped my ass

Him:what? Why? Wasn't he looking at the road he was going?

Me: Don't be so dramatic babe I hardly felt it

Him: No man's trolley will bump my girl's ass ok

Me:

Him: I'm serious

(We were laughing about)

- 
- 
- 

Khanyo's POV

(Hey guys I'm Khanyo James my Mom died many years ago she was never married my Dad just disappeared I'm looking for him here I'm 33 years old I'm married to Ashley James she's 32 years old)

Her: So baby who was that woman?

Me: I don't know

Her: She had your watch (she's a very jealous wife and I love her for that)

Me: She looked like someone that's all

Her: Who?

Me: She reminded me of my Father baby silly right

Her: Ohw yah silly

(No her eyes, her lips, her everything the way she is her kindness reminded me of my father it's like I was seeing Dad again for the first time in forever ... I pulled my Dad's old photo he was wearing the watch I have now he left it for me when I was little I still have it ... I need to find out something about that woman)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(Oh I pulled my Parents pictures oh I miss Mom so much I should go and visit her)

"Wha'chu doin?"

Me:Nothing

Him:Let me see

Me:I thought you were asleep

Him:Well I'm not

(I gave him)

Him:Your parents

Me:Yes

Him:Your Dad died too?

Me:Yes

Him:How?

Me:He was killed by gangs ... I hate gangs so much

Him: Why?

Me:After what happened to my Dad I hated them they live for splitting others ppl's blood that's inhuman

Him:Some are trying to make a living

Me:I don't care as a person you have to make an honest living we tried look where we are

Him:Don't judge them Babe you don't know their reasons

Me:Why your defending them?

Him:I'm not ... I'm sorry

Me:Its fine your right I won't judge them now

Him:You have his eyes

Me:(I smiled)

Him:And smile

Me:

Him:Your Mother's skin beauty eyebrows and shape

Me:Ohw thank you Mr Ellis

Him:Your welcome Future Mrs Ellis

Me:Ohw

(We kissed then went to sleep)

- Chapter 25 -

- 
- 
- 

(Its the next day I woke up)

Me:He's not here again

(I saw a paper written {I went to work early I had an early meeting .. I love you})

Me:Oh great

(I made up the bed then took a shower then went downstairs I made myself breakfast then the door bell ranges I went to the door)

"Hey is Mr Ellis home?"

Me:No he's at work

"I'm John tell him pls I came by"

Me:Sure

Him:And give him this

Me:(it was an envelope) Sure I'll give him

Him:Thank you...so your his girlfriend?

Me:Uhmhm yah

Him:I'm his friend (we hand shake) nice to finally see you

Me: Owk

(He left ... He's friend ohk)

-

- 
- 

Khanyo's POV

Me:Baby I'm leaving (shouting walking down the stairs)

Her:(she walked behind me) So early?

Me:Yes I have a very important meeting

Her:Ok let me fix your tie

Me: Ohw thank you ..

Her:Your wearing your watch

Me:Of cause its my lucky charm

Her:Ok bye

(I kissed her goodbye I left ... Went to work today we are making deals with one of the biggest business company's in the country I can't wait and I have my Father's watch on it brings luck ...)

- 
- 
- 

Zoe's POV

(How am I going to tell Vee about her being my niece? )

"Mommy I'm hungry"

Me:Oh Kate your always hungry by a minute ... Here eat your cereal so we can get it going

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

(I was at my office when that lady appeared again)

Her:Good morning Mr Olive

Me:Morning Mrs...

Her:It doesn't matter we need to talk business now

Me:Business but I don't even know you

Her:You don't have too I got information that you might need

Me:Its just I don't trust...

Her:You have no choice Mr Olive see here it's a win win situation we both get rid of the girl then we both get what we deserve

Me:What do you mean about that

Her:Siviwe is your Brothers daughter

Me:That's impossible

Her: Then tell me why your sister is so interested in that girl?

Me:How did you know that?

Her:Mr Olive you need me just like I need you (she sat on my desk then brushed my chest)

Her:You see Mr Olive

Me:I need evidences

Her:I've been waiting for you to say that ... Here(she gave me papers)

Me:What?

Her:Now do you believe me (she smiled at me)

Me:Who are you really? (I smiled at her)

Her:Hmmm

(She left)

(Wow I've been waiting for this moment for a long time ... Finally)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(Its getting late Jake is not home yet I'm getting worried... I cooked dinner)

"Hunny I'm home"

Me: Hey Babe

(We baby kissed)

Him:Sorry I'm late

Me:Pls call next time

Him:Its just after meeting we went to celebrate

Me:Oh it was a good deal

Him:Yep

Me:Let's eat I cooked

Him:You can cook

Me:Today you made breakfast I didn't say anything

Him:Ok ok lets eat

Me:Good (we ate)

- 
- 
- 

Khanyo's POV

(We were watching TV and my baby)

Her:So why didn't you celebrate your good deal

Me:I don't know I'm no Boss my love

Her: yah your not I know I was just asking

Me: I don't know ke

Her: So your watch is working huh?

Me:It always does...They were very kind ppl I thought bcz they are rich and wealthy they will look down on us

Her:Oh wow

Me:Yah let's go to bed I'm tired

Her:I'm not sleepy you always do this

Me: Pls my wife

Her:I want to watch a little longer

Me:We can do something else that'll make you sleepy after

Her:Baby no

Me:Plssss

Her:Baby we've been trying for a baby for a long time now but still

Me:Its ok my love these things take time

Her:I think we need to see a Doctor

Me:Of cause baby whatever you want ... Whatever you want

(Then we went to our room)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(We were getting ready for bed)

Me:Oh baby this came for you this morning

Him;(he was brushing his teeth at the bathroom I was laying in bed) What is it?

Me:Its a Envelop ...A guy named John dropped it here he was so formal he was Wearing a black suit I didn't know you had other friends phof I didn't know you had friends at first at all

Him:Let me see

(He opened it ... He's face changed)

Me:Babe?

Him:

Me: Babe?

Him:Huh?

Me:Are you ok?

Him:Yah yah sure my love let's sleep I'm tired

Me:Come (he got under covers we slept)

•

•

•

- Continuation -

•

•

•

(Morning)

Me:Jake(shaking him to wake up)

Him:(In a sleepy voice) What? What?

Me: Your late for work

Him:Chill baby I'll go later

Me:Oh... Why?

Him:I'm too tired

Me:I was so worried

Him:Its nice to see that you care

Me: I do a lot

Him:Hmmm (he kissed my forehead) let take a long warm sweet bath together

Me:Great idea

•

•

•

Unknown

Hey y'all I'm the 'mystery girl' well you all know me and you all will be shocked when I tell you my true identity so well let's just keep it like this ok? Bcz I know you'll tell Vee she doesn't have to know ... She doesn't have to know (Evil laugh )

•

•

•

Vee's POV

(Jake is still getting dressed I'm doing my hair when he's phone rang it was beside so I was going to pass it to him but he jumped for it ok ... He went out to answer)

Me:What the hack?

(After 30 minutes he got in I acted normal)

Me:On your way to work pls drop me at the mall

Him: Why?

Me: I got things to do

Him:What kind of things?

Me:Haibo...(I popped my eyes Looking at him)

Him:Vee what kind of things?

Me:Things Jake things

Him:I'll lend you some money

Me:I have my own let's go pls

(I was wearing my flowered short dress with brown sandals and a sun hat in was pretty hot...I walked out first he walked behind me)

Me:Hurry your ass up I know I look good

Him:I wasn't looking

Me:Yah right

Him:But can't I just look at my baby

(In head I'm thinking you just got a call and went out to answer it and for 30 min you better not be cheating on me again or I swear I swear I'll never forgive you this time)

(After some time were arrived)

Me: Thank you bye (he pouted for a kiss I just got out of the car and got inside the mall... I'm pissed yaz... I don't even know why I'm here I'm so dramatic... I went to spur I ordered Burger then shopped for lingerie for my baby red lingerie ... Then some few food items ... Then I saw the watch guy passing by I ran after him I held his arm)

Me: Hy

Him: Oh hey

Me: I'm Siviwe but ppl call me Vee

Him: I'm Khanyo ppl call me Khanyo

Me: You so funny

Him: Can we sit and order something

Me: Sure sure ... Let's go to Debonairs

Him: Sure

(We got in we took seats then)

Him: So what brings you here?

Me: I wanted to get out of the house woah

Him: What? You can't stand your family

Me: Oh it's my boyfriend but he's at work now

Him: Oh you with someone phof I mean your pregnant and all

Me: Is it showing?

Him: Yes.. Don't worry it's not bad

Me: You think so?

Him: Yes your great

Me: Now I feel better ... Why your here?

Him: Oh we had a day off at work today ... These companies are cool

Me: Oh you work for a company?

Him:Yes...I'm a designer I draw bridges and buildings

Me:Oh really my boyfriend own one of the biggest companies here

Him:Which one?

Me:Craft Sites he's Jake Ellis

Him:Mr Ellis I know him

Me:Oh wow

Him:Oh he's my Boss he's a very good Boss

Me:So your bosses went to work but you didn't

(I'm trying to suck some information)

Him:I don't think so they are the once who said we must get rest

Me:Oh since the celebration took long last night

Him:There was no celebration

Me:Oh yeah there was no celebration its just I'm mixing up days

(He lied to me            HE LIED)

Him:Yah but its work tomorrow

Me:That's great ... Oh you have a beautiful wife by the way

Him:How did you see that?

Me:I saw her ring she like barely wanted me to see it

Him:She's a jealous woman

Me:She's right I'm also jealous for my man

(We laughed while eating)

Him:So have any family members?

Me:I'm afraid no my both parents died and I have no siblings

Him:Oh same here

Me:That's sad very sad

Him:Yah

Me:That watch is really beautiful

Him:Thank you my Dad gave it to me when I was very young

Me:What happened to him?

Him:He was shot that's all I know

Me:Mine too but he was shot buy gangsters

Him: Was he a gangster?

Me:My Mom said he was I don't know

(We talked for a while then we left I went home ... I took a long bath then put on my Lingerie then cooked dinner I waited for Jake to home come he came late while I was starting to lose interested)

Me:Hey baby I took off he's blazer and tie

Him:I'm tired Vee I need to sleep

Me:I made dinner special for you

Him:Siviwe I'm tired (he rushed upstairs he never called me that ... okw ... I turned off the lights I went to sleep he didn't face my side fine I slept heartbroken of cause )

•

•

•

- Chapter 26 -

•

•

•

(I didn't sleep a wink last night I'm so hurt I woke up it was 5am I went to the kitchen to make breakfast I still had my lingerie on after sometime Jake walk down the stairs)

him:Morning

me:Morning

(I dished for him and for me too)

him: Thanks

(He's not even apologising about last night WOW)

Me: You came home late last night

him: Yah it was a lot of paper work

me: Ow I guess you were really tired

him: Yes

(I got close to him I brushed his back gently I miss my man guys really I don't know what got into him)

him: I gotta go to work

me: What is it Jake?

him: Stop hiding behind work every time I try to be intimate with you

him: Your trying

me: Jake I made special dinner for you last night you didn't even say anything I bought this for you (pointing to my lingerie) you didn't even look at me (he got close to me)

him: Babe I didn't notice I'm sorry

me: Do I disgust you Jake?

him: No no no my love your don't

me: (That wasn't enough at all) go get ready for work Jake (I took a bath he tried to join me) Oh no no take a shower

him: What? Why? I want to take a bath with you

me: Well your not

him: Your mad at me?

me: Your gonna be late for work

(he went to the shower... where ever he's going I'm going TODAY IS THE DAY...he was done I was done)

me: What's on your waits?

him: Nothing just a stretch

me: Jaaake don't make me lose it that's a scar

him: I fell babe

me:Don't babe me

him:Babe what's wrong?

me:Your handle your phone calls in private your secretive and your asking me what's wrong?

him: Babe it was just work

me:The secrets?

him: What secrets?

me:Coming home late

him: It was work too ... my love I would never lie to you (oh yes your are now)

me:Ok

him:So your good

me:Me?Oh I'm good(I laughed sarcastically )

him: Are you sure coz your laughing weird

me: Ohhhh fine I'm 100% FINE

(Iwore my flowered short dress with plat pumps he wore blue jeans,White shirt then took his car keys then left I took my purse and my shades I took a cab)

me:Sir follow that car DON'T LOSE IT

him: Cheating husband

Me:I hope not

him:Ok

(he drove off)

- 
- 
- 

Christian's POV

me:Like I sad do not hurt Vee

her: No I will not but if she gets in my way I have no choice Mr C

me:Lay your finger to her single hair I'll kill you

her:Chill lover boy why did you two broke up if you still love her?

me:That's none of your business

her: (sipping her glass of wine)mmm maybe your terrible in bad

me:Vee is not a hoe

her:She took my Jake

me:Its not her fault Jake never noticed you even when he pass you

her:(she got angry and stood up and looked at me) bring up Jakes name I'll kill you

me: You have to kill Angela first

her:I got that under control

me:You better ... no one knows about plans other than both of us right?

her:Of cause no one knows

me:Good

- 
- 
- 

Angel's POV

(I was walking down the street when a car started to follow me I started to increase my pace then I felt someone holding my hand I turned with fear)

me:David

him:(he smiled) Angela

(I had the shock of my life the last time I saw this man was the night we spent together )

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

him:Here's your husband

me:Thank you you good

him:Thanks pls pay up now this neighborhood is very dangerous

me:How much will that cost me?

(I paid up I got out of the car I had my arms side to side I tired as hell its like I was running ... I went there I knock a tall macular guy popped out oh wow he's big)

me:(I had my moods I didn't care how big he was) I'm looking for my man he just entered this...this place

him:Lady pls go

me:(I put on a smiley face I looked at him again) Sir my baby is hurting I need that man inside here NOW (I changed my attitude)

him: Ma'am pls...

me:Look here Sir if you want to keep this horrible job of yours you better open up

him:Ma'am...

me:For the last time (I was burning up furious with anger) Let me PASSSS

(He opened it)

me:Thank you

(I saw GUNS,KNIFE'S all kinds of sharp stuff to kill plus there a lot of half naked tattooed men here Hmmm ..

Vee snap out of it your here for your man ... the men kept whistling when I got there)

me:Oh no no don't even look at me I'm taken see I'm pregnant ...now Where's my man (I looked around JAKE JAKE JAKE ...A guy came to me)

him:Ma'am pls leave your in a wrong place

me:Look here Mr whatever your name is I'm looking for Jake Jake Ellis I saw him getting here pls don't make me mad I'll lose my mind

him:Ma'am pls

(he was pushing me)

me:Who ever owns this must come out now I'm not leaving without seeing Jake am I clear (get your filthy hands off me)

"don't touch her I got this"

me:(I put my hands on my waist my eyes shrink a little) work huh?

him:Babe I can explain

me:Ohhh explain

(he took me to an office I guess)

him:What are you doing here?How did you get here?

me:Let's see I'm pregnant I'm tired I've walked all thr way from across the road to here I'm sweating my feet are killing me your baby was kicking the whole day the sun is heating on my precious forehead my boyfriend is lying to me and your asking me that?

.

Jake's POV

me:Why?

her:Bcz your lying to me what are you hiding from me Jake?

me:You won't be able handle is

her:I can

me:I'm a gangster

her:Ok I can't handle it ... what?

me:I'm a gangster Vee its in my blood now and I own this place

her:I need water and air I need air

me:I'm sorry you found out like this

her:Oh your really sorry... so when when you planning to tell us?

me: us?

her:Me and my baby

me:Soon I think

her: Does your family about this?

me:Yes

her: Your parents?

me: Yes

her:oh wow

me:Actually Vee were all gangsters

her:who is "we"? Your parents are they in this too?

me:Oh they are in

her:What? Austin?

me:in

her: My precious Zayn?

me:Oh he's totally in

her:Oh no

(her reactions were so funny )

her:What are about my two beautiful Angels

me;Oh they know but not involved

her:Thank God

me: Even Martha knows

m

her:(her eyes popped out) what my beautifully Martha knew?

me: yes

her:I can't believe it

me:That's one of the reasons why I didn't want to be with you at first I thought you'll get hurt because this business is really dangerous

her:Ow babe its ok its in you moc I won't change that its ok

me:Really?

her:yah and I thought you were going on a strip club but this is worse than a strip club

me:It would have been better if I had gone to strip club

her: NO ...then tell me the truth this time who called you that night you went to answer the phone privately ... don't even thinking of lying to me I'll find out

me: it was my men we were robbed

her:so that explains the moods

me: Yes and I'm sorry for that you didn't deserve the way I treated you

her:Its ok ... and the time you came home late

me:I was coming here and I saw that were really robbed

her:And the scar?

me:I got into a fight with one of my business partners

her:Oh

me:Is that all

(please be that all)

her:no there's something else

(oh there's something else      wow)

her: Whats in the envelop?

(ohhhhh shit I'm dead I have to lie on this one)

me:It was just business thing

(she can't find out about that at all or she'll freak out. .. that envelop there were threatening message from my enemy "Shark" he wants to ruin me he said if I don't lend him more drugs he'll kill my family my whole family)

her:Ok fine

(she wasn't pleased with my answer)

me:I'll call my man to drive you home

her:Sure

me:I love you ok

her: I love you more

(we kissed then I called my man to drive her home I walked them out then got back in my men where applauding and whistling at me)

me: Yah yah I know she's hot but she's mine now chill and get back to work (these guys are too dramatic but I love that woman with her craziness)

- Continuation -

•

•

•

(that guy took me home I swear Jake is hiding something behind that envelop I'm not stupid  
...while I was in those thoughts my phone rang)

me:Hello

"Am I talking to Siviwe Phola"

me: It depends on who's calling

(he had a weird voice)

"Its me Khanyo"

me:What why do you sound like that?

him:I'm sick that's all

me:Ohw how are you?

him:I'm sick and you?

me: I'm great I think

him:Him look Vee we need to talk about something very important but I don't know when?

me:Tomorrow I'm tired today

him:Tomorrow it is

me:Sure

(we dropped the call while I was going to rest the door bell rang)

me:Ohhh God who can that be

(I went to open up)

me:Zoe?

her:Vee can I come in?

me:Yes sure come on in

(how did she know where I live?)

me:Want something to drink?

her:Water will do

(I gave her water we set on the couch)

me:So what's brings you all the way here?

her:I came to see a friend

me:Oh wow I feel so blessed (I was rubbing my feet)

her:Your feet hurt?

me: A lot Zoe woah

her: Let me help you

me:Oh thank you (she rubbed my feet then we chatted)

- 
- 
- 

Angela's POV

me:David let go of me

him:Angela you know I loved you why did you leave me?

me:Let go of me David (I was crying then he let go)

him:Ok but pls listen to me pls Angie

me:Don't call me that

(I was so broken this is the only man who ever loved me for real)

him:Pls I beg you listen to me

me:David I don't want nothing to do with you nothing what we had is over and you know it

him:That's what you want to believe you know deep down you still love me and I still do

me:(He's right) David pls I'm young enough to be your daughter

him:I know that but I love you Angela and you know that why did you leave me

me:Just stop it David nothing can change the past ok

him:Love can Angela pls come back to me

me: Huh I don't want drama your wife is a drama herself

him:My wife died Angie and you knew I loved you not her

me:Pls let me be David

(I ran away crying)

him:Angie pls come back ...pls

(he sound sad ...after what he's wife did to me I can't go back he's wife found out about my affair with her husband then he had me kidnapped then beaten up I was also dating Jake on the other hand then I fell pregnant his wife lend me money to get rid of the baby and leave their lives forever or she'll kill me so I blamed Jake for my pregnancy but I knew he wasn't the Father bcz I slept with him once and I was on injection then I slept with David at that time I stopped injecting I used condom but it blast then I fell pregnant I'm sorry I know I'm a bad person but I was young and stupid I didn't know what to do I could have done abortion but I wanted my baby to live and have a family I thought Jake will do that and sure he did I saved my baby my Davids baby I love him I still do but I can't keep hurting ppl I love bcz of my mistakes I'll tell Ava and Jake the whole truth then I'll live their lives for good I swear I'll never bother them ever again )

- 
- 
- 

- Chapter 27 -

- 
- 
- 

(its Morning Morning today I'm meeting with Khanyo tomorrow I'm visiting my Mom's grave although it will be sad)

Jake:Wakey wakey sleepy head (kissing my cheeks now that was a very good morning )

me:(in a sleepy voice) I'm awake I was just thinking (I rubbed my eyes)

him:Your voice makes me Hmmm (he kissed my neck while tickling me)

me:No no stop stop

him:no

(then we heard the door bell)

him:Don't answer it

me:No are you crazy

(he tickled me more I couldn't breath)

me:W...hat if ....it's ...important?       ahhh st...op

him:       fine fine fine

(I wore my gown then went downstairs I opened the door)

me:My babies

Ava: Vee

Lucy: Hey

(we grouped hugged)

me:come in what a pleasant surprise

Lucy:You don't even go and see us (she made a sad face)

me:Oh I'm so sorry I was so busy my babies

Ava:Ohw we missed you

me:I missed you too

(we hugged again)

"Morning girls"

Ava: Oh wow Dad you took Vee away from us

him:Come on she chose me

(they all looked at me)

me: oh no don't look at me

Lucy: Anyway your belly is starting to show

me:And yours too

him:And I can't wait to see my Champ

me:She's a girl

Ava:Yes

Lucy:I want a girl too

him:What no no Boys I want boys pls

Ava:But daddy I want a little sister and a cousin sister

him:Ok but they will be boys

(while were talking about that my phone rang)

me:Khanyo hey

(Jake looked annoyed oh he's jealous)

him:Can we meet not pls at Wimpy for breakfast unless your still sleeping

me:No no I was already awake I'll get ready then I'll come and meet you

him: Thank you so much for this

me:Its nothing anything for a friend

him:Sure bye

me:bye

(call dropped)

Jake:What's with you and this Khanya guy?

me:He's a friend plus I gotta bounce I'm meeting up with him

Ava:How old is he?(she did a blushing face Jake got really annoyed)

Him:He's old enough to be your Father like me

Ava:Jeez Dad I was asking

me:Your way too young for him sweetheart ok I better go but girls lets meet Thursday for lunch ok?

them: Yes

(I took a shower then wore my black long dress with white flip flops they are more comfortable then comb my hair I should finally do braids I miss them then put on my perfume)

"You look nice"

me:Thank you

him:Perfume really Vee for him?

me:Babe who said I'm doing it for him I wanna smell good you know

him:Wow ok

me:Are you jealous? (I stooped what I was doing I looked at him)

him:Me jealous oh pls

me:Well then goodbye

him:Wait

(I turned to him)

me:Yes

him:I love you

me:Oh wow that's nice

(he came to me)

him:I mean it

me:Don't worry if I wanted to cheat on you I would have done that a long time ago I mean you've seen Christian

(I walked away)

him:What do you mean about that huh?

(I laughed at him then I left)

me:Bye ladies

Lucy: No we'll drive you anyway were going home

me:Ain't staying with your Brother

Ava; No no Dad is fine alone here plus he's not a good company

me:Fine let's go

Ava:Plus I wanna meet this "Khanya" his name sounds hmmm like a beautiful thing

me:Ahhh no it doesn't you wouldn't understand it

Lucy: Let's go pls I have to go somewhere today

(we got in the car she drove off they pass me to the mall)

me:Bye girls

Ava:But Vee what about "Khanya" (she made a sad face she can't even pronounce the name well)

me:Bye Ava

(they laughed then drove off)

(I went to Wimpy I saw him at a corner table he looked nervous like he's going to propose or something )

me:Hey

him:Hey

(we hugged then took seats)

me:I hope I didn't make you wait

him:No no not at all

me:Ok

him:Look I called you here for something very important

me:Yes yes what's wrong

him:Look I have information about your Father

me:What? My father

(he's phone rang)

him:Hey

....

him:What?

...

him:No no no I'm coming now which hospital?

...

him:Yes I'll be there thank you

(he dropped the call)

me:What's wrong

him:I gotta go to the hospital my wife was hit by a car

me:Ok ok

him:I'm sorry for this we will talk okay

me:Its ok your wife needs you

(he left oh I feel sorry for him )

- 
- 
- 

Angel's POV

(I was alone in my apartment when when I heard a knock on the door I opened)

me:Oh David

(I turned he got in)

him:Angela pls (I wasn't looking at him but I noticed he was silent for a while I turned to face him)

him:Who's this?

(oh God he saw Ava's picture when she was a baby)

me:No one give me that

(I took it away from his hands)

him:Who's that Angie

me:Nobody David now leave my apartment NOW!!!

Him:Not after you explains this

me:Get out David

him:Is this the child my wife told me about?

(She told him that Bitch I was silent)

him: Tell me dammit

me:No no ok (I started to cry)

him:Tell me the truth Angie (he started to shake me)

me:Leave me alone David your hurting me

him:You lied to me

me:Its yours ok its yours happy now

(he was roaming around the house don't know what to do)

me:Look Dav...

him: Shut up Angie you lied to me you separated me and my baby you left me bcz your Mother was sick or was that a lie

me:Don't you dare turn tables here

him:I loved you Angie even though I knew I was married and of cause it was wrong of me to cheat on my wife but I fell in love with you Even though you were younger than me out of all ppl you know what I mean

me:Dav...

him:You hurt me Angie I was so hurt when my wife said you aborted the baby then left

me:Oh thats all she said (my voice was shaking) she didn't mention that she had me beaten up I almost lost my baby huh?

him:Your lying

me:Of cause I'm lying David you never believed me

him:Angie...

(he got close to me)

me:Don't you dare come close to me LEAVE NOW

him: I...

me:LEAVE

(Tears where falling down my cheeks he left I cried then slept)

.

.

•

Lucy's POV

(I'm at the Doctor today)

Him: Your keeping the baby very healthy miss Ellis

me:Thank you

her:Look Lucy don't be sad actually your doing great your healthy and your baby too just don't think too much

me:The only thing I'm thinking about is forgiving Sam but I can't but I want too

her:That boy traumatized you but look at you now your still so beautiful as ever

me:Thank you so much

her:Your welcome sweety

•

•

•

- Chapter 28 -

•

•

•

(A month later Jakes phone rang and he wasn't around I didn't know if to answer or not then he entered the room)

me:Your phone

(He picked it up but he was strange he didn't look pleased with the news he had on the phone then he dropped the call angry)

me:What's wrong my gangster man (I hugged him from behind)

him:Nothing love its just business

(he left in a rush)

me:I winder what problems he have now

(my phone rang)

me:Hello

"Vee its me Khanyo"

me:Wow its been a while

(I heard a knock at the door I walked downstairs while on the phone)

me:Haaaa it's been years

him:Suyibaxa( don't exaggerate)

me:Oh there's someone at the door pls hold

him:Ok

(I opened the door its too males wearing black suits)

me:Can I help you

them:Come with us

me:No

them: We don't want to hurt you Ma'am

me:Leave my house

"Vee what's going on?"

them:Do this the easy way or

me:Where will you take me?

them:Ma'am pls

me:Why your talking at the sametime did you rehears this?

them:No

me:No you did

them:The hard way then

(they grabbed me by my waist my phone fell)

me:Hey get your stinking hands of me.Help!!!!Help!!!(I yelled they taped my mouth they forced me on the car...I was moving none stop and crying)

Guy1:Hurry up Bro

Guy2:I'm trying man

(they covered their faces )

Guy 1:I don't want this I told you now were kidnapping a pregnant woman

Guy2:Just drive man you can't back out now

Guy1:I'll never do this again

Guy2:Boss will never let you go that easy now let's stop talking in front of her

(I moved I kept on shaking and crying I can't even see where are they taking me)

Guy1;Pls take that tape of her

Guy2:Are you insane?

Guy1:she won't do anything she's tied up

(then the guy took off the tape)

me: Where are your taking me?(in a breaking voice)

Guy1: I did you a favour to get that tape of you so shut up and don't say a thing

me:Who's your Boss huh?Pls don't hurt me I'm pregnant

Guy2:We noticed now SHUT UP

me:Pls let me go I'll give you any money you need

Guy1: Blind fold her were arrived

(they took me in a very stinking place they made me sit on a chair they cuffed me my hands and legs)

•

•

•

Jake's POV

(I'm at work my company is at risk I'm losing a lot of money ... then my phone rang)

me:Hellow

"Am I talking to Jake Ellis?"

me:Yes your are?

"I'm khanyo"

(oh I don't like this guy why his calling me?)

me:How can I help you

him:I think Vee is....

me:Is what? (I was getting worried)

him:Kidnapped

me:(Its him) Leave it to me DO NOT CALL THE POLICE

him:But why

me:Just don't

(I grabbed my car keys then ran out)

"Boss the ratings are decreasing...Boss"

me:I'll come back tomorrow

(I drove straight home everything can wait my babies are in danger I called Erick)

Me:Dude our enemy is starting to throw bombs

him:What do you mean "Shark" thee "White Shark"

me:He kidnapped Vee I swear if he lays a finger on the I'll go insane

him:Calm down well meet at the wearhouse

me:In 30 ok

him:Sure

(I was driving like a maniac I got in the door was open Vee's phone in on the floor so no force breaking in she opened for them so its clear they took her aggressively bcz here's her left shoe here so they took her aggressively Game on Shark hurt my babe I'll hurt your balls then I went to the wearhouse finally I got in time )

me:Erick call the IT we'll track Vee down

(he did)

me:Ok track my girlfriend man the tracker is on her body

Erick: What?

me:Dude not now OK

Erick:No I wasn't going to say

IT:That's a new one

me:Just do your magic pls

(he did all thats necessary)

IT:Ok I found her

me:Were

IT:in \*\*\*hospital down town

Erick:What?But it's been closed for over 10 years

IT:And it was burnt down too

me:Let's move and follow the lead

(We left then we arrived at this Hospital)

me: I'll show myself

Erick;Now you smoked weed he'll kill you

me:If I came I had back up filled with army he would have killed Vee at the exact time but if I show myself he'll let her go

Erick: And you?

me:I'll be fine

Erick:This is a terrible idea

me: trust me

- 
- 
- 

Angela's POV

(I called Ava for lunch and she said yes surprising huh so now I'm waiting for her)

"Ok talk"

(I turned)

me:Ava

her:Get straight to the point

me: Whatever I say to you just know I love you

her: Spare me the intro I gotta be somewhere some of us have better things to do

me:Its about your Father

her: Why didn't you call him so we can all three talk

me:He ignores my calls

her:I don't blame him

me:This is about your father

her:What about him?

me:No Ava your real Father

her:What????

•

•

•

- Continuation -

•

•

•

Ava:No my Father is Jake and he's the only Father I know and...

me:He's not Ava (We were both teary)

her:What? What are you saying Angela

me:I'm sorry

her:(She stood up) Your evil you have no heart if you have one its made out of stone (she broke down) I hate you I HATE YOU ANGELA you go to hell

(she walked away)

me:Ava pls (I broke down right there I couldn't hold it in I'm such a bad person a fucken bad person )

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(I'm still in this dump)

me:Someone get me out of here(I yelled I kept on yelling but no one after sometime I was getting hungry) I'm hungry (then a tall well built man got in wearing blue jeans... black hoot and black shoes his face was covered I could see his eyes he was carrying KFC lunch box and soda he put on the table in font of me)

me:What the hack? How am I suppose to eat?

(he groaned)

me:Jeez

(he took a sit next to me he feed me I kept biting while talking)

me:You have such beautiful eyes you know

(he didn't mind me buy he kept on feeding me...ok anyway I ate then when I was done he gave me a sip on the soda but it spelt on me)

me: Ahhh it's cold (I was wearing a whirt shirt and pencil skirt)

me:Don't just stand there do something I'm tied up Nigger

(he took the napkins then dried me then he unbuttoned my shirt Gosh my bra was all wet)

me:Hey hey don't cross the line here get off me

(he stayed back)

me:I'm full thank you

(he left nxxx idiot)

- 
- 
- 

(I stayed there for more hours a man wearing all black came on the door)

me:So your the boss huh?

him:Oh your good

me:So care to explain to me why I'm here?

him:Oh you'll know soon enough

me:Pls let me go

him:I can't sweet lips

(he set next to me he touched my face I turned away)

him;Where did that idiot get such a beautiful girl like you?(he went down my chest)

me:Don't touch me

him:Shhh your chest is so beautiful... (he kissed my neck I was moving while tied up for him to let go)

me:Don't touch me let me go (I shouted but he didn't listen) plsss

(Jake entered the room)

Jake: Let her go

(he turned)

him:Your have bad timing Mr Ellis

him:Get off her

(I was breathing heavily)

him:Ok Mr Ellis

me:Babe

(Jake came to me then untied he had was pointing a gun to this guy then he was done untying me I hugged him)

him:Mr Ellis tell her

me:Tell me what

Jake:Nothing babe

him:Or you want to tell her

me:What's going on

him:Well your boyfriend here slept with my wife

(my world crumbled down)

me:W---hat?

(He didn't say anything he just stood there)

me:No its a lie

Guy:And what do you explain this kidnapping?

me:I don't know .. business?JAKE TALK

(he was still silent )

guy:Last week

me:No no its a lie Jake right its a fucken lie

him: (with teary eyes) I---'m sorry (it came as a whisper)

me:No (I stepped away from him) No no no (I was crying) why?

•

•

•

- Chapter 29 -

Guy:Ok whatever Lady he did ok

me:(crying) I want to know why?

Jake: She invited me for drinks I don't remember the rest babe I swear I don't remember

me:And I should believe that?

Guy: Ok shut up its my turn to speak I want him dead and now

me: Shuuut up I'm talking to my man(I grew anger)

Jake: Babe calm down your stressing the baby

me:Thats what you really care about... Jake been with you for a while now I know when your lying...Did you sleep with her

him:Baby I don't know I don't remember

me:Quit the act pls now I'm paying for your sins bcz you could keep that (pointing to his dick) in your pants

guy:Girl your waisting my time

me:Shut up ...

(Erick and some guy entered pointing guns at that guy)

guy:Wow now its a family reunion

me: I hate you Jake I hate you but will finish this conversation at home

guy:Woah woah woah slow down

(I quickly took Jakes gun I shoot the guy)

me:Ahhh

Jake:Vee

(Erick went to him he checked he's pulse)

Erick: He's dead

me:At least its for trying to rape me

Jake:Let's go Erick tell the guys to clean up all this mess let's go

(we got in the car they drove us home I went upstairs I need to wash off that dirt)

Jake: Can we talk?

me:All I'm asking and still asking is DID YOU FUCK HER?

Him:I don't know

me:Then I'm outar here

him:Pls don't leave me Vee I love you

me:You don't know what love is...I was kidnapped Jake almost got raped Jake I killed a man bcz of you if (I looked at his eyes I got close to him my tears fell down my cheeks)I love you sooo much Jake ever since we shared that kiss at your parents house I've been loving you since I love

your touch(I touched his face) I love the way you make me feel I love the way you love me I love you I love your smile,scent,voice, hugs,lips,eyes, arms when you hold me I feel like there's nothing that could hurt me...your chest would be my shelter...I love laying on your chest and feel your heartbeat I would smile alone listening to it bcz I knew deep down it was beating for me and mine was beating for you...When you will make love to me it will be like I'm I'm Paradise everytime were making love it would feel like its the first time (I kept on crying while talking) Your love saved me from myself Jake Ellis I love you so much I can write a book about you about our love a whole entire book bcz your the only man in my life I adore you I love you but the question is DO YOU LOVE ME

(I walked away to shower I left him speechless)

- 
- 
- 

- Continuation -

- 
- 
- 

(I showered then wore my long flowered dress and pumps I love pumps I grew up wearing them so Yah)

Jake: Vee

(I looked at him with a death stare)

me: What?

him:You believe me right?

(I heard a knock)

me:I gotta get the door

(he grabbed my arm)

him: Babe you know me

me:LET GO OF ME by the way how did you find me

(he let go of me then turned away)

me:You knew bcz you really slept with that girl ... excuse me(I went downstairs I opened the

door)

me:Khanyo

(we hugged)

him:I'm so happy your ok

me:Me2 come in want something to drink?

him: Cold water will do

me:Ok coming right up

(I went to the kitchen then came back)

him:So Jake found you

me:Yes he did and in time

him:I'm glad

me: Oh you told him

him:Yes I didn't know what to do

me:Oh ok anyway how's your wife?

him: Grt the car incident was horrible she can't walk

me:What? Oh no I'm so sorry

him; She'll walk soon she's taking classis

me:I wish you guys all the best

him: Thanks

me:So the driver?

him:He was drinking and driving he's arrested now

me:He deserves it I'm sorry

(we hugged again)

- 
- 
-

Jake's POV

(Ok I had enough of this Khanyo guy I've had it with him now he's hugging my girlfriend none stop well my future wife)

- 
- 

Narrated

(Jake took out a red box in his pocket he looked at it "I was going to propose to her tonight" he looked sad "I really love this girl after what she said to me I could never be so sure in my life I love her...her words stabbed in my heart the more she talked it's like she is twisting the knife and pushing it in " He opened the box it's a gold ring a very beautiful gold ring with diamonds then he smiled at it "One day I'll make that woman mine One day" then he smiled)

- 
- 
- 

Angel's POV

(I was in my apartment crying my lungs out when a knock at the door disturbed me I even had hiccups my eyes were red my nose was red I opened the door)

Me: David what the hell do you want?

(he got in then closed the door)

him: Your crying

me:I'm fine OK (my voice changed bcz of crying)

him: Angie what's wrong you know I'll do anything to make you happy

me:Really? then leave that'll make me very delight

him:Angie your hurt

(I was sitting on the couch he sat next to

me)

me: I'm hurt I'm so hurt (I broke down)

him:Come here

(He laid me to his chest I cried even worse all the things I did with this man came floating back all the memories I shared with him and the day I found out I'm pregnant the day that woman kidnapped me and beaten me up I almost lost the baby the day I abandoned my baby the day I saw her the second time the time she said those hurtful things to me I'm broken inside and I deserve every pain Evey insult I deserve it)

him:Don't cry my love I'm here don't

- 
- 
- 

Lucy's POV

(I was in my room when Ava walked in crying)

me: Hey Ava hey come here hey

(she came to me I hugged her she cried in my arms)

Ava:I hate my life Lucy I hate it I wish I could die I don't want to live anymore it hurts

me:Shhhh (taping his back) don't cry come on pls stop calm down tell me what happened?Did Angela hurt you?

her:In the worst way my friend

me:What what happened tell me?

her:Jake is not my real Father

me: what

her:Yes(she broke down)

me:Don't cry shhh(what the fuck? that woman is insane)

- 
- 
- 

Christian POV

me: So how did it go

her:I drugged him he refused to sleep with me I mean look at me

me:I don't

her:Ok Christian just because I sleep with you doesn't mean we'll date I want Jake

me:And I want Vee

her:But that Jake is head over heels with that Vee girl

me:Vee is nothing compared to you that's why she gets all the cup

her:Are you making a joke now that he'll propose to her

me:What?

her:Do you live under the rocks or something?

me:How am I suppose to know I didn't drug him

her:Whatever he is planning to propose

me: Don't worry he won't

her:Of cause he won't my husband already made sure of that

me:What do you mean?

her:Chill she's fine I'm the one who is hurt here

me:What do you mean?

her:She killed my husband

me: nice joke

her:Laugh all you want

me:Vee killed a man?

her:Yes Christian you better back off looks like she's dangerous

me:Not to me

her:Whatever be a hero

- 
- 
-

- Chapter 30 -

- 
- 
- 

Hey I'm Vivian Lewis I'm 35 I'm a widow my dearest husband was killed by that Vee girl she did me a favour though all his assets are coming to me I'M RICH and how I know that? I have eyes everywhere sweetie the I.T guy who tracked Vee is working for me...I know their every move so they better watch out...So I called Christian...Christian wants Vee and I want Jake so we need to come up with a plan to ruin their love story )

me:Hey Christian

him: What do you want?

me:Oh don't be so cold I miss you

him:Look I'm not in the mood with you

me:Blah blah blah Christian...so thought of a plan yet

him: What about Angela? She also wants Jake

me:She still does?

him: I think so the last time we talked he wanted him back

me:I'll make a plan

him:Do it quick pls

me:Yah yah just chill

(I dropped the call I should hire someone to kill her)

me:Ahhhhh the I.T guy I trust him

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

(I'm done with revenge I have to find the baby Angela had I don't even know how will I do that or where should I look)

- 
- 
- 

Ava's POV

(I wanted to clear my mind I need to just get away from everyone I haven't told Dad the news yet I just couldn't handle all of that...I went to take a walk at the beach I saw a guy coming out of the water holding a surf board)

him:Hey

me:Hy

(He's cute hot and all but I'm not in the mood for guys)

him:Why a beautiful girl like you thinking about

(we both stopped walking and talked)

me:About my life and his messed up it is

him: Tell me all about it first let's get some ice cream

me: sure

(Oh he's nice he bought two chocolate ice cream he left his board then we took a walk)

him:I'm Ethan (he reached for a handshake)

me:I'm Ava

him: Ok so Ava what's eating you up

me: Family problems

him: I thought it was a boy cheated on you

(I laughed)

him:I was gonna say he's an idiot and blind asf

me:Why's that?

him:A beautiful girl like you? He's insane for real

me: Thank you

him:Your welcome

me:No its not that I'm even single

him:what where are you from?

me:\*\*\*\*

him:What guys there are blind walking with sticks huh?

me: maybe

him: yah and which school?

me:\*\*\*High School

him:Guys at that school are blind either

me:

(I laughed I even forgot I had problems)

him:So whats really eating you I'm a very good listener I swear

me:

him:Come on try me

me:My Mom showed up he left me for years and telling me that the man who raised and took care of me when she wasn't around is not my real Father she's real devil I tell you

him:Wow I wouldn't lie and say I know how you feel actually I don't but I just lost my Dad too

me:Oh I'm sorry

him:Its cool I just want the person who did it behind bars

me:I hope you find him

him:You mean her

me:Its a woman

him:Yes anyway enough about me so did you tell your Father?

me:Ahhh no I'm scared

(we went to sit on the rocks watching the sunset)

him:You should tell him and be calm when you do so he doesn't feel sorry for you and your Mom forgive her at least she told you the truth

me:You think so

him:Yah she deserves a second change so do you

me:Maybe you right

him:Yes and stop stressing yourself you'll get wrinkles (he hit my arm playfully)

me:I promise

(a car beeped behind us and a woman shouted)

"Ethan let's go"

him:That's my Mom ok bye nice to get to know you we met at the beach and told each others problems

me:That's a new one

him: Bye

me: bye

(he left the car drove off wow they have a shofar maybe he's rich)

- 
- 
- 

Vivian's POV

me: Who was that girl you we're with?

him:No one Mom stop meddling in my life jeez

me:Hey don't talk to me like that I'm your Mom

him: My Dad just died Mom and thrown in some dump as if he was an Animal find that lady she must be locked up

- 
- 
- 

- Chapter 31 -

- 
-

•

3 MONTHS LATER

(I've moved out of Jake's house I got an apartment I'm so lonely I miss him with all of my heart he's just in denial...Im one step closer to give birth so does Ava I can't wait)

Christian: How about dinner tonight?

me:Ohw I'm sorry I can't I'm too tired

(I was with Christian just chillin at my apartment I'm relaxing on my couch with a cup of coffee in my hand)

him:Oh its ok maybe some other time

me:Yah maybe

•

•

•

Jake's POV

Erick:Dude stop drinking your lungs out Vee is...

me:Don't you mention her name

(I was drunk asf)

him:Drinking won't assist you with anything Jake

me:I love her man I would never hurt her in purpose

him:Then fight for her

me:She wants nothing to do with me

(I took another sip of Vodka)

him:Man your killing yourself

me:She left me for something I didn't do man I can't sleep...I can't eat...I can't do anything I'm used to her next to me

him:Bro...

me:Leave me alone Erick and drink in peace

him:What about your kids?

me:I do think about Ava and my unborn and Vee that woman put a spell on me I swear

him:Dude its love you love her now get yourself together and fight for her or that Christian guy will take her

me:He'll never take Vee away from me NEVER

(I took another sip)

- 
- 
- 

Ava's POV

(tonight I'm going on a date with Ethan I can't wait he's taking me to playland near the beach of cause .Ok so I wore my short bum shorts, dusty pink crop top,Nike kicks then applied my nude lipstick tied my hair well neatly no make up and I was smoking hot plus I was smelling hooooo amazing ✓ he texted me that he's outside I tip toed walking to the door I opened a little)

"And where do you think your going?"

(fuck I turned)

me:Lucy?

her:Where are you off to at 21:00 and wearing that?

me:and what are you doing at this time here

her:I was getting something to eat I got hungry and you?

me:Lucy pls I really gotta go your delaying me

her:to where or I'll tell

me:Fine...with friends ok

her:Fine I'm telling

me:Fine fine I'm going on a date

her: Jesh about time

(she left)

me:So your not telling?

her:No I got a lot of things to take care of like this right here kicks none stop

me:Thank you

her:Whatever

(I rish out I found Ethan standing outside of a car I greeted him)

him:Hey you look amazing

me:Thank you your not bad yourself

him: Hey I tried

(we laughed then left)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's pov

(I can't sleep I'm just at sofa watching the stars and moon tonight they are so beautiful then someone knocked)

me;Who might that be at this time?

(I opened the door)

me:Jake?

(he fell on me I caught him I dragged him to my room actually I can't let the father of my child on a sofa noway plus I didn't have other room he was so drunk and stinking of alcohol)

me:What are you doing here?Oh God

him: Babe is that you?I came to apologize (he was saying that in a low tone)

me:No just sleep your tired...did you drive here?

him:No I took a cab

me:Nvm just sleep your going back home tomorrow

him:Noooo (he said waking up)

me:ok lay down your not leaving just take some rest

(I took off his shoes and socks)

him:And my pants pls

(Really? )

him:Pls pls I don't sleep comfortable with them

(he ordering me while he's laying on the bed with 0 problems on his mind... and so relaxed with his eyes closed... I took them off)

him:And my shirt pls

me:Your drunk Jake not sick do it yourself

(I was tired he's heavy I just carried him all the way to the door to hear)

him:Pls its too hot

me:Ok fine

(I took of his shirt I started to unbutton him)

him:Your tickling me

me:I'm great you found it amusing just sleep already

him:I'll sleep

me:First sit up I have to take off your shirt

(I did)

him:You smell amazing

me:Done you can sleep

(I changed to my silky night dress then slept next to him peacefully I closed my eyes now I can sleep...I was starting to enjoy my peaceful night then Jake rolled and grabbed me and got close to me then whispered in my ear)

him:I love you

( yah right...I tried to get him off me but he was so strong this night is going to be long very long)

.

.

•

- Chapter 32 -

•

•

•

(its morning)

me:Jake get of me

(Getting him of me)

him:Come on its still early

me:I need to pee Jake pls

him:Ok(he smiled) don't go away ok?

me: where would I go?This is my apartment you should be going

him:I'm not going anywhere

me:For now

(I went to the bathroom)

•

•

•

Ava's POV

me:Ohhhhhhhh shit the sun is out

(I slept with Ethen oh no)

Ethen:Hey babe I made you breakfast

me:No no no thank you so much I gotta go

(I was dressing up so fast)

him:Where your going babe?

me:Home duhhh I'm dead do you hear me dead

him:Ok I'll drive you

me:Oh no that would make things worse thanx though babe

him:Pls I'll part few houses away

me:Oh your so sweet but...

him:I insist

me:Fine let's go

(we got dressed quickly his Mom was not home so we we're alone and last night too haaaa I love him anyway back to the story we got in the Car then he drove off on the way I'm panicking what am I going to say bcz they think I slept home oh no I hope Lucy covers for me if she's up she probably asleep by now God be with me)

Ethan:Calm down

me:Calm down I'm getting kicked out of the house today for real and thank God Dad doesn't live with us any more

him:You'll be fine

me:No I will not

(then he stopped the car)

me:Here I go

him: Give me a kiss

(I kissed him then opened thr door)

him:What?

me:What?

him:I didn't felt it I barely felt it you were so quick

me: fine

him:There we go come here

me:

(we kissed a long kiss)

him:Now thats what I call a goodbye kiss

me:Whatever

(I ran out of the car then took a walk home parked 2 houses away then I got in the gate I was scared to knock ok I should face my fears I knocked)

Lucy:Great timing Cousin

(she walked away)

me:Where is Grandpa

(I got in I closed the door)

her:They left this morning

me:Oh thank God

(I took a sit then calmed down I did breathing exercise)

Lucy:So what happened? You slept with him on a first date?

me:What no we've been seeing each other for a while now

her:And you've been hiding it from me?Do you know how big is this?

me:I know I'm young to date blah blah blah but he's so handsome

her:I bet he's not playing you

me:Why would he?

her:I don't know look where I am

(she left. ..No Ethan is not playing me)

.

.

.

Vee's POV

(I took a shower then I was done I got out of the bathroom)

Him: You look so hot pregnant your even glowing

me:I'm getting way ugly if you ask me and fat

him:Yes but getting fat in the right places

me:Jake pls go your girlfriend needs you

him:I never slept with her

me:Jake pls don't its 8 in the morning I need some rest even the sun is out looking so beautiful if I wasn't pregnant I'd love to go on the beach wearing a bikini

him:You can wear a bikini

me:No

him: But for me

me:Do you really think that's sexy?

him;Yes

me:No I mean you

him:Of cause I mean you never complained before

me: Jake stop

him:You were groaning all for this (pointing at his abs)

me:Stop

him:Yes

me:That's not what I meant Jake pls

him:Oh you still groaning over them?(raising his eye brows and smiling)

me: your crazy

him: See I'm making you lough again

me:Yah bcz your crazy

him:Come on

(he tried getting up then he twisted his waist)

me:Oh my God are you ok?

him:Ahhhh no no

me:lay back I'll give you a massage

(he smiled)

me:Your not faking right?

him:Whaaat nooo

me:If you are I'll kill you

(Massaging him he laid there smiling)

him: Hey hey your touching my manhood

me:No I didn't

him:Yes you did see now it twitches

me:I better stop

him:No don't stop

(I stop)

me:Your accusing me of making you horny

him: Hunny you make me horny by just looking at you

me:Arggg I'm sick of this

(I tried to get of him)

him:I'm sorry I was just putting it out there

me:You said its twitching leave me alone thats your business

him: But you provoked it

me: What?I didn't provoke anything

him:It doesn't just get excited for no reason

me:Well I also can't explain

him:But you solve it

me:What ewwww

him:Ewww what now

me:Let me get up

him:But come on the twitching is getting worse feel it

me:What nooo

Him:What your afraid you'll twitch too

me:Jake your nasty

him:If you won't twitch prove it

me:Look I'm not doing this plus this conversation is weird

him:You didn't mind touching it that time we were making this little one

(he brushed my tummy)

me:Jake Ewww ok ewwww I'm not touching anything

him:Your with someone?

me: Yes

him:Whaaaaaat while pregnant with my baby?

me:And what's wrong to that?

him:No no its just wrong someone else is touching your belly every night and having all my my meal to himself

me:What meal?

him:The meal is you baby

me:I'm not your baby

him:So this someone you've slept with him?

me:Yah

him:How many times?

me:We've been dating for a month now so we have sex like 3-4 times a day

him:What? doesn't he have a job? where does he get all the energy

(then he let go of me then I stood up he did too)

me:I don't know but he's just amazing

him:So he hits it for real?

me:Yes and his manhood is so big (I had a big smile on my face then I set down) I moarn and moarn over and over again (I bitten my lips)

him:I want to see him

me: What you want to see it? You'll get offended man I mean

him:Vee cut the act ok there's no guy your being with here (he got dressed then I heard him mumbling) jeesh (he mock my voice) 3-4 times a day .....3-4 times a day my foot

me: I heard that

him:Go get dressed

me:Now your offended wow

Continuation

- 
- 
- 

Lucy's POV

(I'm home alone Ava is out Martha is out to buy groceries my parents haven't come home yet so I'm at the lounge looking at a magazine eating strawberries when someone knocked disturbed my peace I went to open)

me:Sam?

him: Lucy

(WTF )

- 
- 
- 

Vivian's POV

me:Ok all you'll do is get in by climbing the steps at the back then stab her

(I was talking to the I.T guy Shannon)

him:So this Angela girl is alone?

me:Yes go already here is her address I won't share my Jake with anyone

him:But Jake still loves Vee

me:Just shut up and do what I just told you

him:(he sighed) ok

(he left)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(I was at my apartment Jake already left but I told him I was lying ...then my phone rang)

me:Hello

?:Hey Vee its me Angela pls don't hang up

me: What do you want?

her:I need to talk to you

me:What?

her:I know I know its crazy but Pls we need to clear our differences

me:Your other tricks no thank you

her:Pls

me:By the way I'm not with Jake anymore

her:Come here plz I already texted you my address what I'm going to tell you will interest you

me:What do you mean Angela?

her:Pls

me: ok I'm coming

- 
- 
- 

Ava's POV

(I'm with Ethan at the beach its really hot today)

me:But we just saw each other few hours ago

him:I missed you

me:Ohw

(we kissed I saw Jaden coming our way we stopped)

me:Hey Jaden

him:Hey Ava

(we hugged I introduced him to Ethan then we began chatting)

Jaden: I was heading to Lucy I need to talk to her

me:About?

(he laughed)

me:Ok don't tell me actually she's alone you can go

(he left)

Ethan:What was that all about?

me:He likes my cousin

him: Who is your cousin?

me:Lucy Ellis

(he was shocked a little)

me:What you know her?

him:Nahhh I've seen articles about her being raped you know

me:Yah she's such a strong woman

(his phone rang on the screen the was a familiar woman it was written "Mom" )

Him: Hey Mom

...

him:At the beach with my girlfriend

...

him:Ok when will you get home?

...

him:10 wow Mom so late

...

him:Ok fine

...

him:Bye

(he dropped it)

me:Your so close to your Mom

him:Very

me:I want to forgive mine too

him:Pls do for your sake

me:Yah

•

•

Chapter 33

•

•

•

(I went to this apartment of Angela's she better be quick bcz I'm tired my feet are swollen...I got in I went to the receptionist dest)

Me:Hey I'm looking for Angela Oriano

Her:Ok pls sign here first

(Wow ok I sighed)

Her:She's in the 6th floor in room 190

Me:WTF ok thank you

(I struggled walking to the lift a man walked behind me)

Him:Which floor Ma'am?

(Oh what a gentleman)

Me:The 6th floor

Him:ok

(He pressed 6th button)

Me:And you?

Him:6th floor too

Me:Ohw what a coincidence

Him:Yah

(Then I panicked alone)

Me:That girl better be there and better be clear and she better be quick

(The elevator stopped we got out he laughed)

Me: What?

Him:Your talking alone thats why

Me:you heard me so I wasn't talking alone

(He laughed he went to room 188 I went 190 Damn this whole building is fancy and huge...I knocked...no reply... I knocked for more than 5 times even that guy walked out)

Him:She's not opening she not here

Me:No she's here I will not come all the way here pregnant for this crap no not never

Him: Try to open

(I did)

Me: It's open thank you

(He walked away...I opened the door )

Me:What? no no no

(A huge knife stabbed in her heart...I screamed) Noooooooooo oh no oh God no no (I kneeled with my knees)Angela oh God I took a fleece that was on top of the couch I tried stopping the bleeding oh God)

Me:Angela Angela pls

(That Guy entered)

Him:What's wrong?(he saw her) oh Shit

(He called the police then checked her pulse)

Him:She's dead

Me:No no (my eyes were red I was heartbroken I mean she's a mother she's a daughter she's a human even though she did many hurtful things)

Him:Ma'am Ma'am calm down I'm with the police (he took out his badge) I'm detective Cruise pls step aside the police are on their way

(Whuuu I was sour he helped me up then set on the couch I stopped crying I had hiccups)

Me:She wasn't a bad person though she had a daughter

Detective: its ok your not a suspecte well I think

Me:What do you mean you thi

Me:What do you mean you think?

(Police came in rushing)

Detective:Ma'am pls step aside we will need your statement

Me:But...

Him:Pls

(I Walked out of the room confused will I be a suspect in this crime but...but...I also found her dead )

- 
- 
- 

Ava's POV

Me:Hey Cousin

Lucy:What?

Me: I thought about it I'm forgive Angela and I want to knows who my biological Father then I'll face Dad myself

Lucy:Wow what makes you say that all of a sudden?

Me:Ethan

Her: Wow this Ethan guy

Me:Shut up what about Jaden?

Her:Ok thats got nothing to do with you

Me:hmmmmmm ok

Her:When are you leaving anyway?

Me:Now don't sweat it Cousin

(I left her)

- 
- 
- 

(40 minutes later waiting for the Detective)

Him:Ma'am...

Me:Miss Phola

Him:Ok Miss Phola we need you to go home for now

Me:(Sarcastic laugh)Sir I've been here for over an hour now my feet are killing me and don't mention my back

Him:I know were sorry

Me:Anyway am I in trouble?

Him:I can't say that much Miss but you need to leave for now.

(I turned) And don't leave the country

Me:I'm a suspect right?

Him: I'm afraid so

Me:Wow(in a low note then went down the elevator I bumped into Ava)

Me:Ava(my eyes were still red and I was tired)

Her:Vee?

Me: What are you doing here?

Her:I should be asking you that

Me:Uhm...

Her:Why your so pale? (Touching my face)

Me:Ava

Her:I'm here for Angela to...forgive her

(My world crumbled down)

Her: Hey did she hurt u?

Me:No she...she

Her:She what? Is that blood?

(I looked around don't know what to say)

Her:Did u 2 got into a fight?

Me:She's dead Ava (crying)

Her: Who?Who died?

Me:(my voice shaking)Angela

Her:What? How? Why? Huh?

Me:I'm sorry

(She cried watching her cry broke me oh God bare with me)

Her:No no she...

Me:I'm sorry babe

Her:What happened?How....

(I told her everything including me a suspect)

Her:But that's just...

Me:I know I didn't kill her

Her: Of cause you didn't

(We hugged Jake called me)

Me:Its your Dad...hello

Him:Where r u?

Me:Uhm what do u want?

Him:Lucy is on labour

Me:What were coming right away

(Call dropped)

Me:Lucy is giving birth

Her:What wow

Me:Let's go

Her:No

Me:What?

Her: I want to see..Mom

Me:(I forced a smile) Ok...when I can tell everyone?

Her:Will do it together after Lucy gets discharge from the hospital

Me:Ok

(I left she also left...This is way too heavy for my heart to bare how can I put on a straight face?  
My hell life begins here and now)

Chapter 34

David's POV

Me:WHO KILLED HER???????

Him:They say its Siviwe Phola

Me:The pregnant woman?

Him:Yes Sir

Me:Don't piss me of IT'S NOT HER

Him:But Sir...

Me:I don't care what the Police say...She didn't kill her THIS this is way personal find the right person who did this Max and bring that person here

Him:Yes Boss

(He left...I'll kill that person I swear on Angela's memory I just found the love of my life now they kill her I want that person DEAD I'll get to the bottom of this)

•

Jake's POV

Me:I called Vee they are coming

Mom:Oh my baby I can't wait to see her

Dad: Calm down sweetheart

Doc:Ellis Family

Me:Here Doc

Doc:Our patient gave birth very well there were no surprises she's resting for now

Mom:Oh my baby can I meet her

Doc:Sorry Ma'am she's still asleep now but u can wait

Me:Thanks Doc

(He left Vee got in)

Me:Babe

(I hugged her)

Her:We didn't make up

Me:Sweety

Her:No...how's Lucy

Me: Uhm she gave birth but now she's resting

Her:Ohw I can't wait to see her

Me:I can't wait for you to give birth

Her:You think its fun huh?

Me:I want to be there when your in labour

Her:Whatever

Me:So you'll let me?

Her:Yah whatever Jake

Me:Thank you

(I hugged her)

Me: This is why I love you

Her:And her too

Me: There is no her

Her:Don't convince me Jake

Me:I love you Vee only you

Her:I better go and congratulate your Parents

(She left...Dammit SHIT)

Continuation

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(Lucy gave birth her baby is so beautiful she gave birth to the cutest baby girl ever ...We all at Lucy's room now she's already up she's holding her baby)

Cc; Oh baby I'm so proud

Lucy:I'm so proud of myself too Mom

Henry:She's beautiful

Me: Indeed Congratulations baby

her: Thank you

Jake:She's so adorable with her eyes closed

me:I know

her:Where's Ava?

me:Uhhmm uhhh she's on her way

her:She said she was going to see Angela

me:Oh is that right?Maybe she's on her way

Jake:Does she know were here

me:Yah I called her

Cc:She's missing this beautiful moment

(she walked in...in a rush)

Ava: Here here I'm already here

Lucy: Cousin you're here

me:You took too long

Jake:Took too long where?(he starred at me)

me:Uhhmm

Ava: Its girls stuff Dad jeez anyway I'm here to see the baby

(she went to Lucy)

Ava:Ohwww She's so cute

(they kept on talking Jake was giving me a dead stare he knows I'm lying...how am I going to explain this? it's worse bcz I'm a suspect Oh God

- 
- 
- 

Vivian's POV

me:You did a great job my I.T but that Vee girl being a suspect wasn't my plan but I killed two birds with one stone

Shannon:Are you sure this will not back fire bcz we are involving the Ellis family

me:Look here your my right hand man you know me you should know by now that I'm very careful when I do things

Shannon: If Jake finds out you're behind this whole thing your a dead meat

me:He won't now that stupid girl is going straight to jail Jake will be mine and you will make sure of that

Shannon: But...

me:No buts I know what I'm doing

- 
- 
- 

Detective Cruise's POV

me:So got the evidence

him:Yes Sir we will have our killer in just 24 hours

me:Good now take them to the lab

(he went out...Evidence better not point to that lady bcz she's innocent I know it she can't go to jail she's pregnant for God sake)

- 
- 
- 

chapter 35

- 
- 
- 

Detective's POV

(There was a problem at the lab so our evidence delayed we have to wait for few weeks to get the results)

me:Thomas (Calling for him)

him: Yes Sir

me:I need us to go and examine the lady's body today

him:Yes Sir

(We went to were her body was...We got in we were welcomed by doctors who were examining her body as well)

me:After noon everyone

them:After noon Detective

me:Saw anything out of the ordinary

Doc 1:She was strangled her neck is red and purple

(Strangled? It's not possible for Miss Phola to kill her she got in and screamed shes innocent)

Doc:And look here Detective she was stabbed by a kitchen knife and a very sharp one

(more evidence proving she's innocent)

Me:So do you really think its a woman?

Doc1:Yes

me;Why?

Doc1:This lady on the finger nails she had a woman DNA

me: It's could be anyone's

Doc:Yes Doc and found out finger prints on her body around her neck

(they gave me all the finger prints linked on a paper)

me:What object used to strangle her?

Doc2:A cellphone's wire

(was she on the phone at that time bcz the phone was laying on the phone when we got there)

me:Thank you so much I could really use this information

them:Anytime Detective

(Me and Thomas we got in the car and drove away)

him:So what do you think?

me:The pregnant lady is innocent

him: I don't think so what about the evidence of a womam on the nails?

me:Maybe its bit hers

him:Don't trust Boss

me:I trust you Thomas but now I trust that woman's word

him:We need to meet Detective Ally today

me:Tell me your kidding she's a rude,selfish, self centred Detective I've ever meet

him:She's working on this case

me:That's even worse bcz she won't get along with Miss Phola she also got an attitude

him:Let it be fight of cats then

me:Ally She's a pain and this case. She'll make Miss Phola's life miserable

him:Tell me about it

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

me:Got anything?

him: Not yet Sir

me: Another thing I want from you is you to find my daughter

him:Yes Sir

(I need to know who's my baby and where can I find my baby...At least I want something to remember her with my Angela the only woman I ever truly loved...Zoe walked in furious)

Zoe: David Olivia

me:I didn't frame her

Zoe:Then how the HELL did you known?

me:Zoe I am not in the mood for your crab

her:Oh and my Niece going behind bars for a crime she didn't...

me:(I got really angry)SHUT THE FUCK UP ZOE you have no idea of the pain I'm feeling now at all my head is spinning

Her:Then who did it?

me:Maybe she got enemies but they are doing me a favour too

Zoe:Your pathetic David

me:I don't care

Zoe:And what's stressing you?

me:Do you really care Zoe

her: No but I just felt like asking

me: Just get out I'm not in the mood for your games

Zoe:Vee better not go to jail

me:I don't care about her I don't care I care about my family and for a baby I never knew

Zoe:You found your babies?

me: Babies?

Zoe:What?

me:What?

Zoe: I better go

me:ZOE get your fat ass here what did you say?

Zoe:You had twins David

me:With Angela?

Zoe:.....

me:With Angela dammit woman (I shouted)

her: Yes

me:How? how?how the HELL did you knew?

her: I overed your late wife on the phone ordering men to kill Angela and her babies and that you must never find out then she saw me listening to her then threatening to kill us

Me:You kept QUITE ZOE? that evil Lady separated me from my babies

Zoe:I'm sorry

Me:I have twins where are they?

Zoe:I don't know I never saw the girl "Angela" too

me:So she was right but she never said anything by w

twins but why? Why Angela? Twins God knows how much I loved that woman

•

•

•

Continuation

•

•

•

Ava's POV

(I'm with Lucy in her room and Vee too)

me: Girls I want to tell Dad the whole story

(they all know the story \*Jake not being my real father and Angela dead\*)

Vee:I'm shaking girl what if I go to jail

Lucy: No you won't you must look if there's a camera there or not that could help

Vee:At least the Detective saw me

Me:I hope he should help

Lucy:But Angela who would want to kill her?

Me:I don't know

Vee:She wanted to fix things

me:I was going to forgive her

Lucy:No man Cousin don't be sad

me:Its ok I'll be strong I just want Dad to be strong too

Vee:He will if you are

(Lucy took my phone)

Lucy: What's time is it (Turning my cell on) Who's this?

Me:Ethan my boyfriend

Lucy: Stay away from this boy?

me:What?Why?

her:He's bad news Ava he's older than you

me:Yah I know but I love him

Lucy: (Crying) for your own good LEAVE him NOW

me:No Lucy why r u saying that?

her: (she calmed down she was breast feeding her baby) Ava I love you so much for you to go what I've been through

me:What r u talking about Lucy Ethan is a good guy

Vee:Girls stop Lucy calm down your scaring the baby...what r u sayin?

Lucy:I'm sorry Ava but Ethan is a bad boy he's friends with Sam

me:What?

Vee:The guy that raped you?

Lucy:Yes...we used to be a squad he used to date a lot of young girls maybe he's using you and on top of that he's a women abuser I've seen him

me:what? No your lying

Lucy:Ava he is Sam's friend what do you expert? That guy is even using drugs stay away from him

Vee:Ava

me: No no your just making that all up

Lucy: Haven't you ever mention me in his presence ?

me:Yah I think

Lucy: What was his reaction?

(By the looks of it now his right he acted strange once I mentioned Lucy)

me:He...got weird

Lucy:He knows me Ava I've saved a girl that he was beating up so bad she ended up in hospital

Vee:You need to stay away Ava

me:No no no maybe he's changed

Vee:Men like him don't change

Lucy:I beg you you'll get hurt

me:No

(I walked out)

Vee;Ava...Ava pls

(I left them...)

- 
- 
- 

Detective's POV

(I'm with Thomas and Detective Ally )

Ally: So Detective...tell me about OUR case

(I told her everything)

Her:So what r we waiting for let's arrest the woman

me:She's innocent

Her: Fine I'll investigate close friends and relatives

me:She has a daughter by the name Ariel Swamp here is her profile

(she took it)

her:Her daughter lives in Colombia?

me:Yes

her:Oh this Angela girl is a mix of white and a Mexican

me:Yes

her: Who's the Father

me:We don't know she's not married we asked her neighbors she wasn't in a relationship with anyone

her: Hmmmm have any enemies?

me:We haven't investigated that kind of...

her:Let's move then detective oh wait I want this suspect we need to talk

(oh ohw here we go)

Thomas:Let's go then

her:We start by her suspect

me:Ok let's go

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

me:What?Angela has a kid back in Colombia?

max: Yes Sir

me:So its possible she's mine?

Max: She's turning 16 this year that's how old your twins should be

(he gave me a picture)

him:This is her

(tears roll down my cheeks)

me:She's beautiful

him:But we can't find the other twin

me:Its ok Max your work is beautiful pls leave me

(He left)

me:My baby has her Mothers smile

- 
- 
-

Vee's POV

(Im in my apartment when I heard a knock on thr door my baby is kicking non stop man I'm always tired I can't wait to give birth woah )

me:Coming

(I opened the door)

me:Detective

(a woman walked in and set on the couch)

her:Pls sit down

(Detective got in and a police man I closed the door)

me:Something to drink

her: We don't have all day sit down

me:Owk

(She's full of herself huh she doesn't know me)

her: Do you know Angela our victim?

me:Yes

her:What's your relationship with her?

me:She's was a baby Momma to my boyfriend

her:What?

Detective: Angela had another baby?

Me:What do you mean another...

her:Who is this baby?

me:Ava Ellis

(she wrote down)

her: OK so where can we find her?

me:at\*\*\*

her:Anyway was your relationship good or?

me:Not good not bad either

her:I can see your pregnant

me:Yes

her:Who's the Father?

Detective: I don't think that's...

her: I was asking Miss Phola

me:It's Jake Ellis

her: father of Ava Ellis?

me:Yes

her:This case is going to be complicated

(they kept on asking alot of boring questions then they walked out)

Detective: Sorry about her

me:Its OK she's doing her job

(he left)

me: That didn't go well

- 
- 
- 

## Chapter 36

- 
- 
- 

2 weeks later

Vee's POV

(I'm alone in my apartment I can't stop thinking about Angela its like I'm guilty I have nightmares of the day I saw her dead on her apartment. I roll out of bed I went to the bathroom to rinse my mouth then went to the kitchen to make myself something to eat I made my way to

the sofa when I felt a warm liquid flew down my thighs I was wearing a short pj's I looked down)

me:Oh shit my water broke

(then I felt cramps in my belly my plate fell I crawl to my phone fuck this hurts.I grabbed my cell I called the ambulance then tried calling Jake)

him:Sweetie

me: I am not your sweetie ahhhhh (I screamed) my water broke Jake

him:Huh?what?huh? where r u? I'm coming

(I dropped the call he didn't even let me say.This baby is tearing my cookie apart I'm telling you. After 10 minutes the ambulance came they took me Jake saw me getting on the ambulance he got in we drove to the hospital)

Jake: I'm so happy

me:(I made a bass voice) JAKE do you know the PAIN (I calmed down) I'm feeling

Nurse:Breath in

(I breathed in)

him:Then out

(I breathed out Jake was holding my hand I was sweating like a pig if it sweats)

Nurse:She's giving birth Carlos move move

(Banging the net to warn the driver)

Jake: Calm babe

me:I can't CALM

(after ages of driving to the hospital we got out the nurses pushed my bed to the delivery room it was so scary their beds were so scary I looked at Jake in shock)

him: You'll be fine Mrs Ellis (he smiled he was also sweating)

Doc:Sir you don't have to be here

me:Pls Doc

Jake:I'm her boyfriend pls

Doc:Ok move to that side

(he was holding my hand all the way even drying my face)

Him:You'll be fine I'll be here all the way

(I was laid on the bed my legs separated they ripped my shorts...The Doc set on a chair in front of me that shit was hot he started pushing my belly slowly allowing me to push I screamed my lungs out)

Doc:Push...push...push

(I'm pushing God dammit Jake took a peak his eyes popped out he panicked)

me: What what

(I screamed again he dried his forehead)

him:All I know is you should be dead by now

(I panicked)

me:Whaaaaaaaaaaaa

(I screamed again this kept on going Jake was sweating more than me he was dead scared asking me how I'm doing every 5 seconds then I heard a baby cry my world got rainbows and freshly summer blooming flowers)

Doc:Its a boy

(I knew Jake didn't.He gave me the baby)

me:His beautiful

(Jake kissed my forehead)

him:A boy I love you Vee

(I looked at him and smiled...then started playing with the babies feet we had our special bond there for few minutes I felt my baby cry in my arms then calmed down what a special moment after sometime Doctor came and took him I was taken to my room Jake went to wait.The minute my head hit the pillow I slept)

•

•

•

Jake's POV

(I went to my family)

Ava:Is she ok?

Mom: Is the baby fine?

Erick: Is it a boy?

Lucy: No it's a girl adorable like this one

(kissing her baby's nose)

Dad: How did it go Son?

(Their questions gave me a headache I set down)

Ava: Dad say something

me: She's fine my baby BOY (looking at Lucy) is fine too they are resting

Erick: Congratulations man

(we fist pump)

Mom: I'm so happy for you my boy

Ava: I'll have a baby Brother although I wanted a sister though

Lucy: I'm sad a little but whatever's

me: I'm so so so happy

Dad: I'm proud of you son

Me: Thanks Dad

•

•

•

David's POV

(I'm with Max in my office)

Max: I offered the girl to come here I told her I'm her Mother's friend she refused

me: Keep on picking her I want her here to explain everything myself I want my daughter

him: Yes Sir and I found your other daughter

(I set up)

me: You did?

him:Yes but you won't like the news one bit

me:Tell me Max

him:She's Jakes daughter Jake Ellis

me:Ellis?Why this family always link to us...So Angela blamed Jake Ellis for her pregnancy one twin of cause

- 
- 
- 

Ethan's POV

(I went to visit Sam in prison)

me;Hey boy

him:Hey

(we set down)

me:So how's life here?

him:Terrible but pls let's not talk about me what brings you here

me:its your baby Momma

him:Lucy? do not touch her

me:She said something to Ava

him:Ava her cousin?

me:Yes

him:What happened?

me: She told her something abt me I can feel it

him:Even if she did what you did was wrong

me:She will not ruin my relationship with Ava

him:And don't you dare hurt Lucy I'll kill you Ethan

me:No I will never go that far I love Ava

him:You better mean that

me:Plus I'm there for a revenge

him:Revenge?

me:I know who killed my father

him:Who?

me:Siviwe Phola

- 
- 
- 

### Chapter 37

- 
- 
- 

Two days later

(I'm with Ava and Jake at my apartment and my baby boy his name is kwenzokuhle Blue Ellis ... Blue who calls a baby blue? but his Father insisted on it I also wanted my baby to have a Xhosa name too...We were having so much fun then we heard a banging knock)

me:Wow who must that be with so much anger

(I went to the door)

me:Detective

(That annoying girl)

Detective;Siviwe Phola you are arrested for first degree murder of Angela Swamp

(Jake and Ava came to the door)

Jake:Wait...what?

me:No I didn't...

(2 policemen grabbed my arms then cuffed me)

Ava: She didn't do it

(The detective said)

"you have a right to remain silent blah blah blah"

Jake:Ava you knew

me:I didn't do it I swear

(They dragged me outside)

Jake: Angela is dead all along

(we got outside)

Jake;How could you?

me:You know me I would never do such thing pls

(He stood there not doing nothing while the mother of his child being arrested I'm not asking the world at least "I know you didn't do it I'll get you out of here" I know I don't deserve it I massed up but we are make mistakes...Paparazzi was taking pictures this will be the Scandal of all time news it will make the front Page I tell you)

Ava:I'm sorry

(Looking at me crying my tears fell but my heart broke looking at Jakes face he was looking at me with hate I could sense it...I was forced to get in the car I got in shut the door I looked at Jake and my baby once again with tears running down my cheeks I cried till I got weak)

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

(I'm watching the news Nahhh I didn't care even if she's arrested she'll give me time to figure out where her Damn Father put the money my Grandfather left him Damn its Millions of dollars and no other person will lay hands on that money other than me and they won't take my business my Grandfather built it with my Uncles now no out sider will take it away from us

- 
- 
- 

Ariel Swamp's POV the daughter of Angela

(I'm watching the news )

me:No no no this is not true I to see this with my own eyes Mom is not dead ( Tears fell down my cheeks to my chest) Oh no God Noooooo Mommy

(My Granny came to me)

Her:Baby what's wrong?

me:Mom is dead Rosa she's dead she left me ALONE (I started crying even worse my Granny hugged me we both cried.What r we going to do? We don't have any money? And wait a sec a man called saying his my Mom's friend I should contact him again to hear what he wants....but no I can't trust any of those white ppl Oh sweet Virgin Mary pls be with us )

- 
- 
- 

Vivian's POV

(Ting tong door bell Christian got in furious)

him; WTF Vivian

(I set on my Sofa again eating my fresh strawberries watching news I saw how that hoe got arrested)

Christian:Im talking here woman how dare you frame Vee?

me:She just fell in to the plan I didn't new

(With a low voice)

him: I don't want her in jail

me:Well her in jail will totally make things easy for me

him:(He sarcastically laughs) For you...for you not for me nor us Vivian...I want Vee

me:So what do I do

him:I don't know but do something

me:Yes do something

him:yes pls

me:I got a better plan

(Shouting)Hey April

(My sister April came out he was so shocked)

April:Long time no see Christian

Him:Sia?

(Me and April smiled)

Continuation

- 
- 
- 

him:What kind of a joke is this?

Me:Well Christian Sia the so called best friend of Vee is actually my Sister

him:What?

her:Shocking right? I pretended to be her friend

him: She trusted you

me:oh pls stop being a pussy man its all over now she's in jail

her:And I'll make sure she doesn't come out

him:How could you?

me:Oh shut up Christian it's over you lost

me:I'll fight for Vee to the death do you hear

her:Be very careful of what you wish for it may come true

him:oh pls you couldn't hurt a fly

(Me and Sia laughed)

her:Who do you think killed my sister's husband? Vee? oh pls she's not heartless

him: What?

me:Look Christian if you try proving Vee is innocent we will bring up the murder of my late husband may his soul rest in peace

her:Got that Christian

him:Your both sick

me:Yah Yah whatever

(Sia got close to Christian)

her:I'll teach that stupid girl what Sia is really capable of

him:But why?

her:That's a story for another day actually

him: Does Ethan know about

me:Ethan oh pls he doesn't have to know all he knows is revenge towards Vee plus he wasn't his real Father

me:R u sick woman?

me:No no no not at all actually I'm the one getting revenge

him:Why? But Vee never did nothing to you

me:Once upon a time Christian once upon a time that scumbag of a Father.Vee's father once raped me...

him: Wait what?

me:And his friends I want my revenge.Vee will feel every pain I felt when her Father raped me  
SHE WILL PAY

him:What? but...she doesn't deserve all this

me:She DOES I was 13 (a sob came out) 13 Christian nothing can erase that night nor pain now I've found my happiness Jake that is I'm not letting him go I'll fight to the Death for him

me:Then so be it

(Christian turned and walked away he left.I want his Daughter to feel all pain I felt and God forbid that bastard having another child bcz I won't hesitate to kill that one either)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(I'm behind bars at police station and no one said anything to me I'm crying my lungs out...)

"Wake up pretty face"

(It was that Ally detective)

me:Oh am I getting out?

(She was with a policeman and unlocking my cell)

her:(She laughed) Oh pls don't kid yourself your going to the interrogation room

me:Ohw

(Then hand cuffed we we went to the interrogation room it was just me and Detective Ally she started throwing questions at me )

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

max:I got good news Boss

me:Sing like a bird Max

him:She's coming

me:Who?

him:Ariel Swamp the other twin

me:Really? When?

him:Well it will take days travelling from Mexico to South Africa

me:So got everything under control right?Flight money everything?

him: Yes Sir don't stress that..What about the Ellis girl?

me: Oh Max I'm still thinking about that now to tell you the truth I don't know what to do

- 
- 

Khanyo's POV

(I saw the news Vee being arrested I know she's innocent I'm going to see how is Jake holding then I'll go to her...I went to his office I found him with a lady)

him:Pls excuse us Fiona and don't forget to the paper work I gave you and tell Mr Jones I'll be with him shortly

her:Yes Sir

(She left)

me:Morning Mr Ellis

him: How may I help you?

me:Look Jake I know you don't like me but from now on you got no choice you have to get used to me

him:If you came here to shout at me LEAVE

me: How's Vee?

him:She lied to me she hid a very big lie from me how am I suppose to know

me:She's the Mother of your child God Dammit

(I was getting angry

him:And what do you want?

me:Try to get her out bcz she's innocent

him:Were you there?

me:She's my...She's my friend I know her she will never do such a thing

him:She lied to me

me:If you were a real man you would have seen it in her eyes she was telling the truth and you didn't even bother listening to her reasons that's how a man in love do

(I left him there)

- 
- 
- 

Chapter 38

-

•

•

Next day

Ariel's POV

(I'm in South Africa now my Granny is calling)

me:Hey

her:Hello my baby so how was your trip

me:Great Granny now I'm in a car to a hotel

her:What? Ain't you happy?

me;Of cause not Granny I want to look at the woman who killed my Mom and tell me why

her:Oh sweetie don't stress yourself

me:Its alright Granny I'm fine oh I've arrived I'll call you later OK?

her: Ok

(A gentleman opened a door for me then took my bags I went with another guy that I was with at the car to the receptionist desk then we were escorted to my room we got in the helpers went out)

me:So I didn't catch your name

him: Max

me:Oh so you were pretty close to my Mom

him:Not that close but yah we were friends

me:Ohw so when I'm meeting my mother's killer

him:Soon but for now rest we took..

me:we?

him:I mean I took you here so you can be comfortable and take your Mom back to Mexico

me:No I want her Ashes

him:Then all of that will be arranged excuse me

(He walked to the door is he shy or what? He was avoiding to look in my direction ever since he

saw me at the airport)

me:Hey wait (I went to him) Look your a nice person maybe that's one of the reasons my Mom liked you

him:Thank you

me:And thank you for doing this for me

him:Its nothing really

(He left)

- 
- 
- 

Ava's POV

(I was thinking abt a huge decision I have to take I don't know if I should do it or not.I went to Lucy's room)

me:Hey hot Mamma

her:Oh I'm not hot at all look at this whole meet I've gained

me:We should go and workout then

her:Yes pls

(We laughed)

her:So what's eating you?

me:Me?What? noooo

her:Come on Ava speak up come on

me:Your good with me sooo good

her:Whatever now talk

me:I want to look for my Dad

her:Are you insane?(She yelled)

me:Shhhh

her: Are you insane?(In a low note)

me:No but I have a right

her:No Jake is your father not that...

me:You don't know him

(Her eyes looked away for a bit)

her;It doest matter Ava you just can't ok

me;Why not?

her:You can't that's all

me:Do you know him?

her:No of cause not

me:If you don't wanna help me then I'll do it myself

(I left)

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

(I'm at my office)

"You look peaceful"

(I lifted my head)

me:Henry Ellis the Dragon

him:Don't you call me that

me:Whatever anyway what do I owe the surprise?

him: Why did you get Vee in jail?

me:Oh come on even Zoe asked me the same thing(His eyes looked down a little) You remember Zoe right? My sister

him;That is not why I'm here

me:Of cause not but Zoe just came up between the conversation

him:David...

me:What happened between you two? Huh?What happened to your "Love story"? I thought you'll love each other forever.What happened Henry(I stood up I went to him) Oh I know what happened your " love " couldn't be because you broke her heart (He didn't say anything I laughed) Cant talk now Mr Ellis?Do you want a drink(I gave him my back I poured some two glasses of whisky)its a pity Mr Ellis (O gave him a glass he looked away I placed it down) We would be a happy family now no bad blood

him:You wanted me away from her

me:Oh no no I'm innocent

him:I loved her David

me:Do you still love her?

(He looked to the window)

me:Ahhh that says it all you still thinks about her I wonder what will your wife say about this

him: My wife got nothing to do with this

me;Does she know about the pregnancy?

him:Zoe lost the baby David and why...

me:That's what you think

(I took a sip of my whisky)

him: What the fuck are you talking about?

me:Help me find Angela's killer the real killer then I'll sing like a bird Mr Ellis

(Taking another sip I then smiled to him he was so furious he got red but he pulled himself together then walked out.After an hour or so Zoe walked in)

me:Ahhh would you look at this surprise I swear your a match in heaven

her:I'm no mind reader David what r u talking about?

me:Do you remember Henry

(Her eyes popped out)

me;He was here an hour ago we had a little chit chat over you

her:What did he say about me?(she got close to me)

me:Nuh ah chill he's a married man now

her:I know that (she set down with a disappointed face)

me: Hold your horses you even lied to him anyway

her:I didn't lie to him you did you never approved of our relationship he was the man of my dreams I got pregnant with his baby then lost it in hospital do you know how hurtful was that I lost two ppl I cared about the same night

me:Your son is fine

her;My what?

me:Well my dearest sister your son is fine he's alive and kicking

(She stood up)

her:I lost my baby David at the hospital I was in a car accident I varied my baby now what the fuck r u sayin?(crying)

me:You never lost him well your a nurse you know how these tings work.I paid professional doctors to take him away from your womb to keep him safe and make up the story of you losing your baby

her:(Tears rolling down her cheeks to her chest)Why? WHY DAVID WHYYYY?

Me:Shhh I'm at a work place Zoe

her:How could you be so heartless

me:Does a heartless raise and take care of a child huh? I raised him I protected him

(She whipped her tears)

her:What the fuck do you mean?

me:He's in boarding school

Her:All these years?

me:Yah and your welcome

her:But why?

me:I wanted to make you surfer Zoe and your idiot boyfriend

her: But why now why saying this now

me:After I found my daughters that made me realise I should also come clean

her:How long were you going to keep this a secret?

me: Till I was satisfied

her:Your so cruel

me:Yah I know

(I relaxed on my chair she was starring at me till she wanted to spit on my face she walked to the door)

me;Oh pls close that on your way out

(She was so damn angry she slam the door angrily its my time to shine Zoe your son wants nothing to do with you and its all bcz of mwaaa...)

- 
- 
- 

## Chapter 39

A week later

- 
- 
- 

Narrated

Vee is in prison now her trial already pass she is sentenced 20 in jail that Ally girl made sure of that.Christian did everything he could even finding the apartment footage cameras but nothing was clear. Khanyo is so hurt that his little sister is in jail.Jake is raising little Blue alone but there's not even a sec passes him not thinking about Vee.David is getting closer to Ariel and still looking for the real murder but no clues.Ariel and Max are pretty close friends. Lucy is so happy with her life even her and Jaden are now official they are dating. Ava is distancing herself from Ethan but Ethan doesn't give up and his relationship with his Mother is not good at all bcz they didn't say anything about Vee killing his Father.Vivian and Sia are planning an attack to Christian bcz he can spil the beans after what they did to Vee. Zoe can't stop thinking about the night she thought she lost her baby.Henry is having sleepless nights thinking about Zoe and the good ol'times.Vee in jail is not doing good the inmates are cool but their guards are their worst nightmare and she misses her baby.Vee and Detective Cruise are becoming so close the detective blvs in Vee but her case was though.)

-

- 
- 

Vee's POV

"Miss Phola you have a visitor"

(I was escorted to my visitor)

me:Detective

him:Miss Phola

(We set down I'm not allowed to touch an outsider)

him: I brought you these

(It was a bag I looked)

me:Food?

him:Your welcome

me:But you shouldn't have

him:I had to OK

(We chuckled)

me:Thank you

him:So how's it goes here

(He saw my cheek bruised)

him:Where you beaten?

me:I was involved in a fight

him:Look at you

(He pulled my hair behind my ear...)

"Sir no touching"

(he let me go)

him:This is dangerous

me:I'll get used to it 20 remember

(My tears failed me)

him: Pls don't lose hope maybe a miracle will fall

me:How Detective? I miss my son (I sob) I miss his giggles I miss my son

him:Just be strong

me: I've been trying to be strong for so long now 1 week and I failed tell me about 20 years how will I cope?

him:Just do cry

(I cried this just hurts so bad I told Jake to not come with Blue I don't want him to see me like this )

- 
- 
- 

Ava's POV

(I've been goggling father's who lost their daughters still nothing how am I going to get this?)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(All the mates are at the lunch actually this prison is absolutely nothing like the once you used to see on TV the mates are minding their problems we don't fight actually the bruises I gave I've been beaten up by other guards bcz I refused to do their dirty work of poisoning another inmate. Ok I have friends here Coco and Rose.Coco is 49 Coco is 23 Coco is in jail because she was a drug lord her husband is a drug lord of all time and Rose was framed they say she was selling cocaine in school she has been here for 2 years well Coco over 10 I've been here for few days and I don't like it one bit)

me:Why is Marcel like that?

(She was like she was poured by cold water her body is always weak and she's always not around)

Rose;I don't know anyway who came to visit?

me:Detective

Coco:Hmmm

me:What?

Rose;Nothing

(We all laughed)

me;It better be nothin

(Night time arrived my cell is far from Roses but near Coco's.So I was in my cell alone just thinking about my life my loved once my Blue and my Jake I felt like crying)

"No no pls not tonight I beg you nooooo"

(Wait that was Roses voice I can't even see where are they taking her)

"Take her"

"No I beg you Sharon pls"

"Go"

me;Sharon what the fuck are you doing?Rose Rooooooose

(She was sliding her feet them taking her by force Sharon came to my cell)

her: Hey sweet lips

me:Where are you taking my friend

her:Friend you just got here

me:Ppl here are friendly unlike you

(Sharon is a real bitch she is the one who beaten me up)

her:Just sleep next time you'll be next

(She left)

"Hey new girl you better keep your mouth shut you don't want to see her bad side. And you'll never forget"

"Even if she doesn't do or say anything that bitch will feed us to her dogs"

me:Wait what?

(Silent)

me:Guys come on

(silent.I went to bed.What do they mean? )

•

•

•

Chapter 40

•

•

•

Ava's POV

me: Arggggggg (Closing my laptop with anger) How can I find this man

(Lucy walked in)

her:Hey

me:Hey

her:I'll help you

me:Really?

her:Well I got some information that will help

me:Pls tell me

her:Angela had an affair with a married man Ava

(My smile faded)

me:With a what?

her;She was 16 I don't know how old was this man

me:But...

her:Yah I know she was young very young

me:How did you know?

her:Pls take a sit first

(I did she set next to me)

her:I saw her but she never saw me nor know I knew she was cheating on Jake...The saddest part is she loved that man

me:Who the married man?

her:Yes

me:What?He was married

her: I could see them together almost everyday

me:Where?

her: If I tell you Ava(she stood up) these families will dig up the bad blood

(I up too)

me:No pls tell me maybe there will be peace

her: No there will never be peace

me:Pls Lucy

her:Its David Olive Jaden's father

me:What?

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

(Ting tong\*that was the door bell I went to open)

me:Bro

him:Bro

(It was Erick we bro hugged)

him: Where's the little Champ?There he is

(Blue was playing with his toys on his bed)

me:What brings you here?

him:Its actually Vee dude

me:What about Vee?

him:I'll tell you this then leave you to think about it

me:Talk then

him:Vee loves you she left everything for you...she carried your son... she almost lost him...she almost lost her life... bcz of you

me:Really Erick?

him:Let me finish... You cheated on her...she was kidnapped...she killed a man...she was almost raped by that sick bastard...she gave birth to your son...she loved Ava like a Mom...Most of all she loved you now she's in jail paying for someone's crime you don't even know her side of the story...Who are you?Are you that stupid and blind? But now its too late you lost her I'm sure she is jail bcz of you but you wouldn't know that bcz your brain cells are tangled and you turned your back on her...It will be all

(He left)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(At the morning we were taken out to have breakfast I want to see Rose after last night I couldn't sleep at all)

me:Hey Coco

her:Hey Princess

me:Rose?Where is her

her:She's coming

(She came to us looking down)

me: Hey sweetie

(She was struggling to walk and sit)

me:Come let me help you

(I helped her sit she finally set down)

me:Rose your face is purple what happened?

her:Old news Vee

me:The guards?This is wrong guys we need to report them

Rose:Where?They are the once who take our complaints if they find out we are trying to get them fired they will literally kill us

me:But how long will we live for this misery?

her:You? 20 years

(I got very disappointed Rose was never rude to me its that Sharon she did something she didn't just beat her there's something behind those beatings)

- 
- 
- 

Continuation

- 
- 
- 

David's POV

(I'm with Max at my office)

me:Why you spend so much time with Ariel

him:Ahhh she's great company

me:I bet your not sleeping with my daughter Max

him:I'm old enough to be her older brother Sir I'll never do that

Me:I hope so because she likes you

him:As a friend Sir if you may excuse me

(He walked out.Then Ava Ellis walked in rushing I stood up I was so shocked her face was filled with anger)

her:We need to talk

(The moment I've been urging for a while now)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(Its late we are in our cells now...it's lonely here...)

"Wake wake Vee"

(I heard chains oh God it's another beatings what...)

Sharon: Look at you looking all beautiful even if cared your a true real beauty my clients will be so proud

me:Clients?

(They took me out forcefully)

me:Sharon pls I beg you

(I tried snatching myself of her she slapped me I cried)

her:Guards take her now my men are waiting

(They made me walk)

me:Sharon your also a woman why your so bitter?Plssss don't hurt me

(She looked at me with no regrets but she smiled then let me leave being taken to that smelly pig style.The guards knocked)

me:Wait where are we where are you taking me?

(We walked for a little while I was sobbing)

"Just shut the fuck up damn your annoying"

(I didn't I cried even worse.They opened the door.I heard men cheering and smoking what the fuck is going on?They out me down)

me:What is this?Where am i?

Guard:She'll be 20 000

(Sorry I'll be what?Am I being sold here?)

men1:oh she's beautiful and worth every penny

man2:There you now pls leave us to have some fun

(What fun?)

Guard:With pleasure

(She looked at me)

her:Satisfy our customers pretty doll

(She left.wait what?A man laugh)

me:No no no

(I banged the door)

me:Let me out pls let me out

(Crying Oh God how did I get here?)

me:Pls let me out I beg you

"Tears won't help sweety"

(I slide on the door to hold my knees and cry.There are more than 5 men here)

me:Oh Mom(Silent cries) Mommy Pls don't leave me all alone

"Done crying"

(Then a man started touching me I stood up to him)

me:Do not lay a hand on me

"Feisty huh?"

(Looking at his friends they all laughed then turned to me he slapped me I fell on the hard ground I screamed)

"Don't ever say no to me nor us ok?We paid for you now go to that bed I'm coming"

(There was a bed at the room.I stood up with my knees weak)

me:No

"What did you say?"

me:I said no

(He grabbed my arm them threw me on the bed)

him:Take off your clothes

(He took off his belt and shirt.I laid there crying)

him:I'll help you sweety

(he unbuttoned my clothes I'm pushing him off)

me:Pls don't do this

him:(Angry)Don't make me mad

(He gave me claps followed by hard punches it's worse his wearing a huge ring its ruining my face)

me: Pls stop

him:Your attitude turns me even more

(He took off my pants along with shoes I was feeling the pain in my face, body especially heart)

him:Oh your gorgeous look at those thighs

me:Wait I gave birth few weeks ago I'm not completely healed

him:That is not my problem

(He laid on top of me)

me:Sir I beg you plsss

(Crying even my head started hurting.He covered my chest with his kisses I cried even worse but not helping. He widen my legs)

him:Your so warm

(I begged him to stop)

me:Pls stop your hurting me pls stop it hurtsss (My heart is breaking the smoke is starting making me sick.He kept on enjoying himself on me while I was in pain bcz the Doctor said it will take a while to recover now this happens.Where is God when you need him? Where is Mom?I'm dying slow here.This kept all the whole night they all took turns I end up not even crying nor doing anything I got way weak.Those men killed me inside I'll never ever forget them EVER.From today I'm a different woman who has nothing nothing at all even the man of your dreams turned his back on me.But how could a person be so heartless? How?)

Chapter 41

•

- 
- 

Next day

Vee's POV

(After last I was taken to my cell weak asf my private part was burning like hell.I barely slept I mean the pain I'm feeling is beyond the hate I have for those guards and these men its another story.Other guards came and took us to the shower room I walked slowly bcz I couldn't walk probably)

Guard:Move already

(Pushing my back I did nothing but cry.I walked in Rose ran to me giving me hugs she was also crying)

her: Shhhh be strong

(Brushing my back.I hugged her tightly and cried in her arms)

me:I just want to die

"Go take a shower you two we don't have all day"

(One of the guards said Rose walked me to the shower I stripped naked i shower)

"She's taking your pictures its not good for you tonight.Again"

(One of the mates whispered then walked away I looked at Sharon she was indeed taking pictures then she smiles at me I gave her my back then tears fell down" Oh God help me".After a while we were done then went to eat I took my tray I walked to my desk Sharon hit my tray my food fell)

Coco:Sharon what the hell?

(She laughed and walked away. Coco help me up and walk to my sit.I cried)

Coco: Shhh she'll stop

me:When Coco today I spotted her taking my pics at the shower

Coco:Come here

(She hugged me)

me:I want my son Coco then die in peace

Coco:Don't say that don't say that

(She comforted me then we were taken outside)

"Miss Phola you have a visitor"

(I walked out escorted by the guards. I'm not in the mood for Visitors. I got there I found Detective)

him: Miss Phola

me: Detective

(I sat down struggling)

him: Are you ok?

me: No I'm in jail what kind of a question is that

him: Ok I'm sorry

me: Why your here?

him: I came to see you

(I just got angry out of space I shouted)

me: I'm not your friend I'm nothing to you just leave me alone leave me ALONE

(Guards took me)

me: Let go of me you abu... (I didn't finish that they closed my mouth taking me out of there)

"You'll pay for trying to sell us out"

me: Pls don't pls no

Guard: Take her to the electric room

me: What? No no noooo

(The other Guard drag me there)

me: Plssssss I beg you pls

(My tears and my screams meant nothing to them)

- 
- 
-

Ava's POV

me:So you also knew?

him:Ava pls let...

me:How could you?

him:I didn't know

me:Liar you knew that the father I called a father wasn't my actual father

him:I'm so sorry

me:Your hurting me do you know that?

(He walked to me)

him:I didn't know you were my daughter pls forgive me

me:Forgive you after all these years

him:I just found out I promise

me:And you didn't try to talk to me

him:You know my history and your families

me:That's got nothing to do with my family this is between us

him:I know I'm really sorry

(he tried touching me)e

me:Don't you dare lay your finger on me how dare you

him:I'm Willing to prove it to you that I'm sorry

me:Really?

him:Yes I'll do anything just name it

me:Since your the most powerful gangster in this country.Get Vee outa jail then we'll talk

(I walked out)

him:I'll do it

(I opened the door I left him)

•

•

•

Continuation

•

•

•

Vee's POV

(We got in the dark room with electric something I couldn't tell what was it)

"Take off your clothes"

me:What?

(With a shock on my face)

"Ok I'll do it for you"

(She started undressing me)

me:No no noooooooo pls stop I beg you

(I was crying do you think she stopped oh no she didn't)

•

•

•

Detective's POV

(Something is going on to Miss Phola she's another person now.I have to find out.I walked out)

•

•

•

Ava's POV

(I went to the prison to visit Vee)

me:Hey I'm here to see Siviwe Phola

her:Pls wait let me do a quick call

(Quick call? Strange. She did her call)

her:She is not available

me:Not available?

her:She was involved in a prison fight now she is taken to her cell for the rest of the day

me:What? Vee is not like that

her:Miss your waisting my time

(I walked out)

me:But why? Vee is not a violent person

- 
- 
- 

Vivian's POV

me;Sharon hunny

her: Hey

me:Is my girl taken care of?

her: You know me I always do what I do best

me:Good girl I knew I can trust you

her:Never doubt me

me:Its clear now

(We laughed)

me:How about the old hag?

her:She knows how I punish her

me:Good make their lives miserable they deserve it

her:With pleasure

(I dropped the call)

Sia:And?

me:Everything is going WELL

Sia: And what are you waiting for your man needs you

me:Maybe your right I better go

her:Go sweetie

(I left.Jake my love here I come)

- 
- 
- 

Ariel's POV

(I went to Davids office)

me:We need to talk

him:We sure do

me:I want to see my Mothers killer

him:Sorry I can't

me:Why?

him:Bcz she's innocent your Mothers killer is still roaming around the street

me:Don't you dare like to me evidence is pointing to that Siviwe girl

him:Its not her and I have an evidence

me:What?

him:Sit down Ariel

me:I will not sit down my Mothers killer is still at large or whatever just talk already

him:I have all the evidence proving Siviwe Phola is innocent but I can't use it bcz I also want her away from everything

me:Everything?

him:Story for another day.Look I called you here in S.A so we can fix our relationship and you can meet your sister

me:What?

him:Twin sister actually

me:And I didn't know YOU AND MY MOM CAN GO TO HELL

(I stormed out)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(When she was done undressing me I was left with my panties)

me:Pls don't do this

(She turned on the electrify machine then places the wires on nipples.I screamed my lungs out my whole body could feel the wires.I was shaking with my hands tied behind my back.I cried I beg for forgiveness.I begged I begged they didn't stop but they kept on twisting the machine to the maximum.After 2 hours of making me their play thing they to me to my sell.That day I didn't eat lunch nor supper my body was hurting my head was starting to stop functioning my heart was filled with hatred I hated those Guards with my whole heart and those men who took turns the whole night raping me but Sharon my hate for her is beyond any hate I will KILL HER.I swear on my Mothers grave.I SWEAR I'll GET MY REVENGE)

- 
- 
- 

Chapter 42

- 
- 
- 

After 2 weeks

Vee's POV

me:I've had enough Rose if your not coming with me well so be it IM LEAVING TONIGHT but killing that bitçh Sharon first

Her:Vee you can get caught

Coco:No we won't we will fake our death so our targets think were dead

her: Ok fine I'm down for whatever.Where your going I'm behind yah

me:Thats my girl

(We did a group hug.I notices Sharon looking at us.That bitch will get what is coming on her way and everybody who caused us pain ALL OF'EM)

- 
- 
- 

Ava's POV

(I'm going to see my Dad Jake. I knocked a old lady opened up)

me:Uhm is my father home?

her:Oh yes pls come in I'm the maid

me:Oh OK

(I went upstairs I found him with Blue.I knocked on the door but it was open)

him:Hey baby come in

me:Hey

(I kissed his forehead and Blue too)

me:How y'all doing?

him:Not good he cries every night

me: He misses his Mom Dad

him:Look here Vee said he wants nothing to do with me

me:She said don't come with Blue at jail Jake

him:I know few days later she sent me this

(He showed a letter I read it out loud)

me:"Dear Jake what we have is over never come visit me ... blah blah blah" Jake you believe this ?

him:What?

me:Do you really think Vee would say that? Look here how many time have you ever done her wrong? She never said something like this you were tricked

him: What about when I visit her they say she doesn't wanna see me huh?

me:What? I also visited her once when I got there the next day they said she was involved in a fight and that she was taken to her cell

him:Vee is not a violent person

me:Thats what I also thought

(David called I cancelled it)

him: Who's that

me:David

him:You talk with that man Ava

me:He's my Da...

him:IM YOUR DAD don't you EVER say he's your Dad he doesn't know you I raised you

me:I'm sorry but...

him:But nothing Ava

me:I better leave

(I left)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(We were planning our escape)

Rose:But how can we escape here this whole place is full of guards

Coco: Yah

me:I got it all planned these past few weeks we will make fire

Rose: Rose ppl could die

me:Do you think I care

Coco: Vee...

Rose:When did you become heartless

me:The real me died the day I met Jake when I get out of here he'll hear me out.And the fire thing girls chill we all prisoners will escape tonight one way or another

Rose: all of us

me: I had this escape thing in me for a long time and we all want the same thing SHARON DEAD and no one want it so bad as me.Tonight I'll make fire myself if you won't but first someone has to turn the alarm emergency button first so there will be Chaos

Coco: Wait hol'up how will you make fire

me:Thats nothing I already have connection here I got lighters with me

Rose:(Whispering) Your a bad bitch Vee

me:I know now all we will do it light up this whole place

Coco: How there are cameras here

me:Chill Coco like I said we all here escaping tonight I rather die getting my revenge or die being a hoe here

Rose:We will finally get freedom we will finally get all those men pay

me:I hear you my Rose but don't forget SHARON

- 
- 
- 

## Chapter 43

- 
- 
- 

Detective's POV

(I'm at my apartment alone as always I made dinner then went to eat watching TV. I turned on the news)

"There was a huge fire in the west prison tonight.All the prisoners are at large..."

Me:What the..?

(I took out my phone calling my man)

Me:We have an emergency I repeat an emergency the west side prison is on fire and the prisoners are escaping.MOVE MOVE MOOOVE.

(I dropped the call)

Me:Oh Miss Phola I can't lose her

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

(I was watching the TV the news popped out showing us that the prison Vee is in is on fire. Not on my woman I'm going there)

Me:Grace pls take care of Blue I need to rush somewhere

Her:Yes Sir

(I ran out)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

Me:I did it all of us let's go

Rose:This seems wrong

Me:Sweety I'm not backing out now my son needs me but first

"I'm all here Miss Phola"

(that was Sharon.I turned and smiled)

Me:Ohhh if only you could know how much I've waited for this moment

(she chuckled)

Her:I knew this was all your fault

Me:Ohw you know me so well

Her:Let's get this over with

Me: Nah sweety I got not time...

Coco:Vee let's go the police are rounding this whole place

Sharon:Just kill me already

Me:No there's me change of plans you'll kill yourself

Her:Never

Me:Ok you'll see

Rose:Vee come on

(they drag my arm)

Me:You'll pay Sharon you'll be dead soon be sure of that

(We ran away.I didn't kill her I don't want her death in my hands but she'll kill herself I'll make sure of that)

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

(I driving there Oh God pls keep my Vee safe.I don't know what I'll do without her.I arrived at the prison ppl were not allowed in I sneaked in I went to the detective)

Me:Detective

Him: Sir your not supposed to be here

Me:Pls I beg you where is my girlfriend?

Him:I'm sorry Mr Ellis many prisoners died in the fire some escaped.

Me:And Vee?

Him:We found a burned bodied in her cell

Me:So what you mean is she may be dead?

Him:I'm sorry but its possible

(no its not her)

Me:It can't be her (I got dizzy I set down) it just can't

- 
- 
- 

I'll continue later guys

Continuation

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(we were running for miles.I was getting tired)

Me:wa---wait i---i--- ...

Coco:Those ppl have cars and army. Sweety they will catch us

Rose:Yes a---and we are in the---the middle of nowhere

Me:W---why y---ou guys are---not catching yo--ur breaths?

Coco:We train

Me:Wow an---and why wasn't i---in---

Rose:Let's go

(Dragging my arm we continued running. We ran till we found a huge muslim church)

Me:Here

Coco:Vee...

Me:These ppl won't notice us we will steal some clothes so we go undercover

Rose:But how we are in jail uniform and where will we sleep and I'm hungry

Me: leave that to me

Rose:What are you going to do

Me:Come

(They followed me.We sneaked in the Muslim church while they were having prayers they didn't see us)

Me:Wasn't that easy?

Coco;Whatever let's get something

Rose:Finally I'll wear something other this

(Getting the jail uniform off)

Me:Let's hurry

(we changed while also freshening up.After a while we were done)

Me:Let's go

Coco:Where?

Me: Back to our journey

Rose:But I'm hungry

Me:I'll take care of you Rose like my own I promised didn't I?

Her:Yes

Me:I'll take care of you now let's go

(We sneaked out and walked away)

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

(I went home they called to hear the fire. I got in)

Me:Everyone

Ava;Dad tell me she's ok?

(that broke me)

Lucy:She is right?

Mom:Tell us pls

(Dad stared at me)

Me:i---I don't know

Ava: What happened?

Mom:The fire how did it start?

Me:I don't know

Dad;Tell us what you know then

Me:They find a burnt body in---in her cell

(they call got tears in their eyes especially Ava)

Me:Hunny don't cr---

(I was going to brush her back she quickly moved away)

Her:Don't touch me---DON'T YOU DARE you killed her YOU DID

(My heart broke she was hurting)

Me:I'm---

Me: You killed the only woman who loved me like a Mother other than my own Mother.She was my friend, a mother everything to me.I hate you I HATE YOU

(She ran upstairs)

Lucy:Shes till hurt.Excuse me

(she left with Mom)

Dad:You let her go there you didn't even try to help her.Your tears mean nothing Jake

(he left. I set down crying. I'm sorry if I hurt anyone those were not my intentions)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

Me:Ok there is a store we don't have money we have to steal

Rose:There's no need

Coco:Tell us what to do then?

Her:Its a young man that is selling right and the store is empty

(It was Somalian stores)

Me:What's on your dirty Rose?

Her:we will need sexy outfits

Me:Wah?

Coco:Rose. .

Her:Come

(there were also Nigerian clothing store we stole the clothes that were outside then ran to a corner to wear.I wore silver minidress that showed a lot of my assets,Rose pink short skirt with white crop top and Coco blue jeans with white shirt we were wearing white jail shoes we didn't care.I don't talk about out hair.Rose have straight back with her own long hair I tied my hair Coco have afro.We walk to that store the young man was starring at Rose while she was giving him those "you want me look?"

Me:This is your plan?

(I whispered)

Her:Watch and learn

Me:I won't learn thank you

(she went to guy she walk to him they talked for a while then I saw her coming our way)

Her:Take everything you want I'll take care the bill

Me:What?Rose

Coco:What?

(She winked. Hey this girl is crazy.She walked around the counter to sit on his lap.What?She rolled her skirt up)

Me:Is Rose...?

Coco:Yes and covering our asses come on

(We started taking things. I could hear Rose moans I looked at them the young man was having fun poor thing)

Coco:Vee come on take as much possible

Me:You guys are real thifes

Her:For years in jail what did you expect

(I chuckled. I looked at them again damn Rose was grinding him.This child will never see gates of heaven. We shopped till we got tired but Rose wasn't done I got tired I went to them it was 23:00 time)

Me:Rose

Her:Hmmmmmm Vee no leave

Me:Ain't you tired

(I left her.She came to us)

Her:Let's go

Coco:If you were my daughter I would have hang myself.2 and a half hours grinding a dick?

Her:Girlfriend he was worth it

Me:I saw your face your eyes kept rolling over your back

Her:He was so goooooood even my pussy hurts

Me:Let's get a place to sleep please I'm tired and I'm hungry

Coco:Plus these bags are so heavy

Rose:At least that a good thing

(we laughed)

Rose:Here is a motel

Me:No money remember

Coco: Don't tell me grind another dick for a room

Her:What no I got money

(she took it out)

Me: What?How?

Her:Sweety I'm good I got your backs

(We walked first to the motel I just stood there amazed)

Her:Coming?

Me: Yah

(we got in er booked a room for the night.tomorrow will see )

- 
- 
- 

Chapter 44

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

Next day

(we woke up)

me:I'm finding a place for us to stay today

Coco:Where?

me:To a frnd

Rose:Who

me:It doesn't matter

Coco:Yes it does we all in this together

me:A frnd I trust ok?And I go alone

Rose:But Vee...

me:Bye I have to go

Coco:You better come back

me:I will we need a place to stay to hide right?So I'm saving our asses bcz I'm getting my

revenge BLOOD WILL PAINT THIS WHOLE TOWN the whole world will know my name I promise you

(I shut the door then walked out.I hope he can help)

•

(I finally arrived I knocked he open)

him:Vee

me:Hey

(He was so happy to see me )

•

•

•

Zoe's POV

(I've been calling boarding schools asking if there's a child who got there early without parents I found Million of them.This is useless)

"Mommy Mommy there's a man here to see you"

me:Ok I'm coming go and play in your room

(She ran to her room.I went to the door I opened)

me:Henry?

him:Zoe

me:Get in why your here?

(he quickly got in)

me:Why your here you want David to see you?

him:I don't care about him now I'm here to see the love of my life

me:Henry pls

him: Zoe you know very well I never stopped loving you

me:There's nothing we can do now

him:There is

me:No there is not please leave now

him:Zoe I came bcz I want to know about our child

me:Henry pls go I'm not in the mood what will your wife say

him: She's my wife not my Mother.Pls I want to know.

me:Look I thought I lost him but I was wrong pls go

him:Its a boy?

me:Pls go I also don't know where he is

him:Fine I'm going pls just dream about me

me:Just go

him:I love you

me:Leave!!!

him:Ok OK kisses

me: Your a old man Henry that doesn't suit you

him:Ah I can't believe I'm here in front of you

(I open the door)

me:Go

(I wasn't even smiling)

him:Just smile a little first

me:No

him:I want to see those white teeth and dimples

me:You still stubborn

him:I'm going

(He stepped outside)

him:I lov...

(I closed the door on his face. Hey men)

•

•

•

Jake's POV

(I tracked Vee I know she's alive. Buy her location is not showing the place she is in. I really want to see her)

•

•

•

Vee's POV

me: Thank you for letting me in

him: You like a Sister to me I'll do anything for you

me: Khanyo look I need your help

him: Anything

me: We need a place to stay to hide actually

him: We? Hide?

me: I'm with friends

him: Vee??

me: Pls we really need to hide

him: Why did you escape?

me: For revenge

him: But why?

me: You'll know for now pls help

him: Here

(He gave me keys)

him: Take them the address is there

me: Really?

him:Yes really

me:OH my God thank you sooooo much

(I hugged him)

him:Your welcome anything for you

me:You are the best I'll make sure this doesn't affect you

him:It won't

me:Oh I gotta go

him:Ok I won't say a word

me:Thank you Bye

(I walked back to the motel I don't want ppl noticing me so I let my hair lose to cover my face.I found them pacing up and down.Rose jumped to me crying)

her:Your ok thank God

me:I'm fine look what I got

her:What?

me:We got ourselves a house to hide in

Coco: Then let's move we got so much work to do like training you for your revenge

me:You won't go hard on us right?

her:Of cause I will

Rose:But Coco

her:No buts you'll be fighting men in this war and I have to fave my husband that back stabber and his little slut they'll pay for betraying me

(Her face turned red she was really angry. Woah she is the cold one she can handle guns and fighting.She will be training us anything we packed our food then went out)

- 
- 
- 

Khanyo's POV

me:She's safe

him:I knew she's brave

me: I'm so happy

him:Me too I want her out of trouble

me:There will be a problem

him:What do you mean?

me:She wants revenge

him:WHAT!!!!Those ppl are dangerous especially David bcz she will get to him

me:I didn't want to stop her I would have ruin our plans

him:Leave it to me I'll protect her all the way I got my eye to her.I won't lose her I just found her.As for that Jake guy I'll blow his brains out

me:I will do the honour

him:Wait for my call

me:Will do

him:Thank you

me:You know Vee means the world to me she's family

him:Sure she is

(Call dropped)

- 
- 
- 

Continuation 44

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

Rose: So where here?

Me:Ahhh it's the address

Coco: Your frnd is stinking rich

Me: That's the point this house is huge and beautiful

Rose:At least no one can suspect us in a house like this

Me:Maybe your right

Coco: The last time I checked we were "MOST WANTED"

Me:Yah let's go in

(Khanyo is this rich all along? This house is beautiful unlike the one his in.Why?why is...)

Rose:Come look at the news Vee we in a deep shit

(I ran to the TV "The prisoners that escaped these past few days are caught but there are few missing..."

Me:Oh no but I thought we covered everything

Coco:We did just chill

Me:Yah

Rose:This house is beautiful though

Me:Yah

(it even had stairs)

Coco: Let's train no time to wait

Me:Oh I'm first

Coco: Ok

- 
- 
- 

Vivian's POV

Sia:Calm down

Me:Calm down?Calm down?Its those 3 migos

Sia:Vivian calm down its not them it was identified that there were bodies in their cells

Me:The survived once will tell everything that happens when the sun goes down there

Sia:They won't I know they won't we just have to chill I got this I also would love to get them myself especially that Rose.

Me:Rose did nothing to you.

Her:She did

Me:Your boyfriend left you bcz of her its not like she also liked him

Her:Look here Vivian Rose took him away from me that's why I plotted the drugs on her school lock and bag

Me: It was you?

(She looked away)

Me:You said to me she was actually them then you reported her

(she kept silent)

Me:Say something.Do you know who is Rose?

Her:She's Rose

Me:She's one of the woman who can destroy us with a click of this business

Her:Huh?

Me: We are alone right?

Her:Yes

Me:Look Rose is the daughter of Billy

(the shock on her face)

Her: Bi...Billy?

Me:yes

Her:Oh no

Me:"Oh no" now?

Her:Where is he?

Me:He died well thats what we think

Her:But Billy is fucken powerful how he doesn't know about Rose

Me:Her Mother slept with Billy she was a maid

Her:What?

Me:Yah I think he didn't know he had a daughter

Her: Billy is not dead he's a untouchable criminal

Me:We don't know really but if Rose finds out and track her Father we are good as dead

Her:How do you know?

Me:I married one of the biggest drug dealers baby

Her:I almost forgot

Me:So Rose is good as dead so she won't finish us then there's Coco and Vee

Her:I want Vee all to myself

(we laughed)

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

(Coco is twisting my arm)

Me:Ahhhhhhh(I screamed) Coco stop Rose help meeeeeeee

(Rose was laughing at me Coco let go I breathed out then laid on the floor)

Me:ohhhhhh

Coco:Come on Miss Phola

Rose: Your weak Vee come on

Me:Ok fine let's do it again

(I lost the fight again)

Me:Time out time out!!!!

Coco:You wouldn't be saying that in war

Rose: Vee come on

Me:Hai I'm done with this woah

Coco;Lets take a break then

Me:I'm visiting my son later

Coco:Are you out of your mind?

Rose:You totally want to get us caught

Me:I was telling you not asking so I'm going

Coco:Be careful

Me:I will

(making my way upstairs I got into main bedroom I took a shower then opened the closet Ohhh look here even woman clothes.I took out a red short party dress with a long coat,red heels then put on a red lipstick I let my hair lose I looked hot)

Me:I'm so hot right now

(I pouted at the mirror then laughed at myself and the heartless me I'll be.Ohhhh they better watch out.Time hit 20:00 in a click I better go its safe.I walked downstairs)

Rose:Awww look at you looking like a twice divorced woman who married men for their money

(I laughed so hard I forgot I was on my way out)

Coco:Rose your good

(she also laughed)

Me:Rose no man I'm leaving

Me:Looking like that?You'll seduce Jake

Me: Shut up

Coco:Yes she is

Me:Byeeee

(I left I took a cab there I knocked.A old woman opened.I cleared my throat)

Me:Is Jake home?

Her:Yes Ma'am and you are?

Me:His business partner

(I let myself in)

Me:is he upstairs?

Her:Ye...

(I ran upstairs)

Her: Ma'am pls

Me:Hey don't piss me off

(she kept stopped nx.I found his room door closed I opened)

"vee?"

Me:Blue?My baby (I ran to Blue he was on his arms I brushed his forehead)

Me:Oh sweety

Him:He's asleep

Me:I'm late

(Looking so sad I want to play with him.Jake put him down)

Him:I knew you'll come

Me:How did you?

Him: I got a tracker on you

Me:What?

Him:Yah

Me:Where

(He was looking at me in a seductive way I moved back)

Him:I'm trying to show you where

(I stopped he touched my coat unbuttoning it then he kissed me.Then whispered)

Him:Right there

Me:Huh?

Her; Its between your teeth

Me:Teeth?

Him:Technology is something else

Me:Get off me

(I pushed him off)

Him: I once thought you were really dead

Me:Oh you would love that

(he told me the story why he didn't come to see me)

Me:Oh wow Jake

Him:I a sure you

Me: Its her

Him: Who?

Me:Your girlfriend

(and I started to wonder)

Him:Huh?

(I don't want him to know my plan)

Me:While I was in jail have you slept with her?

(he gulp)

Me:You did(Doing a angry side smile)

Him:Look...

(I shut him then made him sit down. I strip in front of him I took off my coat even my hair made me look way sexy.Oh Jake will know who am I for real.I set on top of him he looked deep in my eyes I kissed him.I still feel comfortable with him although I was abused.I took off his shirt we kissed I swear there was fireworks he was pulling my hair back he held my waist moving it.He rub my ass and squeezing it I was getting really horny and that wasn't the plan ei Jake is doing all this to me but why does he have to hurt me so freaken much?I would be crazy if I'd say I didn't love him I'll be lying to myself but I'll show him tonight who's boss anyway he went down my neck giving me bites his dick print was doing the most damn.But Vee your not here for this.Once I've seen he's 100%%horny and his hands were pulling my dress up I stopped him in fact I got of him)

Him:Vee?

(The shock on his face was priceless nx dog. He's eyes were so sexy damn his dick print is driving me argggggg crazy I bite my lower lip)

Me:Ask your girlfriend to help you

(I said walking out picking up my coat.Does he really think I'll get out of jail no escaping out of jail to give him pussy he better think again)

Him:Vee no Vee pls babe wait

(he held my wait to him)

Me:Look here I'm not stupid

Him:I beg you then why you did it?

Me:for you to have a sleepless night horny asf

Him:You know you drive me crazy

Me:No pussy drives you insane sweetie now laave me

Him:Vee

(I snatch my hand)

Me:Call your girlfriend or give yourself a HAND (I walked away laughing)

- 
- 
- 

Chapter 45

4 MONTHS LATER

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

Me:Ready for tonight?

Rose:Never been ready

Coco: There's no need to ask me

Me: Great the men are also ready

Rose: I'd love to chop their balls

Me: Ew that is gross

Rose: I wouldn't mind

(I got a call. Let me update you on how our lives were these past few months. I talked to detective we are close now he didn't report me actually he's covering for me although he doesn't like it bcz I'm putting my life at risk and his but I begged him. So it's him calling)

Rose: Oh it's Mr Detective

Coco: Totally

Me: Shut up. Hello

Him: Hey

Me: What's up?

Him: Nothing it's just I feel better when I hear your voice

Me: And why's that?

Him: I would love to know too

(I giggled oh God I giggled)

Rose: HMMMMMMMMMM

Me: Shhh

Him: What?

Me: Nothing nothing

Him: Ok I better get going I'm needed ok

Me: Sure

Him: Be safe

Me: Thanks

(We dropped the call)

Coco: Let's kill those bastards already

Rose:Yes we will for now I want Vee over here to tell us is she falling for the Detective bcz if she does our plan can't go as planned

Me:No Rose were frnds and he'll never betray us

Rose: I hope so and Jake

Me:Jake still loves me and I'm the Mother of his child he'll never double cross me

Rose:Who do you love?

Me:Rose come on already I thought you also want revenge on Sia who betrayed us

Rose:Oh I'll squash her

Coco:And I want that Vivian

Me:Sia, Vivian and David for the death of my Father I swear he'll pay

Rose:He will my frnd we are here to help you for now those bloody rapist have to pay

Me:I can't blv so much happened in such a short time

Coco:We will drop this bomb then disappear

(we laughed)

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

(I'm home with everyone watching TV)

Lucy:Amber and Blue are growing so fast

Jake: Yah

Mom:And still look adorable as ever

Lucy: Yes

Ava:Yes even Blue reminds me of Vee he has her lips abs eyes right Dad?

(She is still mad at me and I can't tell her she's alive or everything will blow up)

Me:Yes he has her Mother's image

Lucy: I really miss her

Ava: I miss her a lot Lucy a lot. That woman's life changed when she met the Ellis family

Mom: Ava

Ava: Yes. I cry every night thinking about her. Why God take those innocent loving ppl and leave sinners here

Lucy: That's how life is

Ava: There are a lot of ppl who deserved to die not her

(News popped up... "We found a video online about three women torturing 5 men then leave them dead." The video played the women have mask on they asked the 1st man a question. "Why your here?" "Bcz we were abusing the woman in jail" She hit him. The girls voice was bold bcz she had something on her mouth. "What kind of fucken abusive?" "We used to rape them")

mom: Oh God

(the video wasn't finished I took out my phone I went online I saw it everyone came to watch. The girls took turns on torturing the men)

Ava: They deserve that and more

"Tell the viewers who let you in?"

"I can't"

"Fuck you"

(All the girls were shouting I couldn't tell who was talking but one of'em was familiar to me. They were wearing jeans and I know Vee's ass that's her ass. I can tell Vee from a mile away I know her that girl is her. She gave countless punches to the man)

"You bastard you taking turns on us every fucken night you perverts"

(Wait what? Vee was raped in jail along with her mates? )

Ava: I love that Woman I wonder who are they

Lucy: Maybe one of the prisoners that escaped and haven't found.

Ava: Woah do you know what this means?

Me: Yes. Vee was raped in Jail

"WHO? WHO LET YOU INNNN?"

"Sharon...Sharon....Sharon and the other guards at the prison"

(the girl came to the screen)

"Were coming to everyone who did us wrong be ready"

(The video ended)

Mom:Oh Lord what is this world becoming

Me:Take care of my child I need to be somewhere

Mom:What?Where?

Lucy:Jake?

(I walked out to my car I went to Erick I need to track Vee down I need to talk to her. I drove off.All along I was home she was being raped MY WOMAN.I swear I'll kill that Sharon and everyone behind it myself and tonight.I called my men)

Me:Listen to me find someone by the name of Sharon and bring him/her to my dungeon DO NOT HURT HIM/HER I'll do it myself.I want that person alive and kicking

Him:Sure boss consider it done

(I dropped the call.Seeing my woman fighting like that broke me.She was crying I know its her I know it I know I can feel it.I can feel it. I won't let her do this revenge alone I'll help her.I kill everyone who did her wrong and I mean EVERYONE)

- 
- 
- 

Continuation

- 
- 
- 

Lucy's POV

Him:I got out today bcz of discipline

Me:What do you want here?

Him: Is that my baby?

(Seeing his face brings back that day)

Me:Come in

Him:Thank you

(I gave him Amber)

Him:She's beautiful

Me:...

Him:Can I spend time with her just a little

(if Dad finds him here hoooo he's dead)

Me:just a little I don't want my dad to see you here

Him:I understand

Me:Come

(I led him to the lounge we set down he set opposite me)

Him:She has your eyes

Me:Does your Father know?

Him:No

Me:Ohw

Him:I wanted to see my baby so bad I've always look at the picture you gave me that day.I really wanted her in my arms

Me:I think you should go now

"Sweetie were back"

Me:Dad?

Dad:Sam?

Me:Dad pls he..

Dad:I don't care get out of here boy

Me:Dad...

Mom:Sweetie pls..

Dad:You i-said-GET-OUT

Him:Yes Sir

(He gave me Amber)

Me; Its Amber's father

Dad:GETTTT OUT

Him:Ok

(He kissed her cheek then he left)

Me:But Dad this is not fair

Dad:You already forgot what that boy did to you?

Me:What?No I'll never forget it but can't we move on and forgive.Didn't he pay?Its her Father she needs him

Mom: She's right my love

Dad:I don't care I don't want that boy in my house ever again

(He left)

Mom:You know him

Me:Its fine but I can't stop Sam to see her daughter I'm not heartless

- 
- 
- 

Jake's POV

(I'm still at the warehouse)

Me:Who will do this?

Erick:don't you have enemies?

Me:Not that I know off I mean we made peace here

Erick:Then this person will leave us penny less bcz we don't know who is he/she

Me:Who is it?Who?! I don't get this

"Sir we just saw the news"

Me:And?

"Those 5 men in the video were found dead"

Erick:where how?

"They were hanged at the bridge and written " We are not done"

Me:Thank you Andrey you may be excused

(He left)

Erick:Damn Vee is Wow dude

Me:Dude that place turned my woman into monster

Erick:She's heartless now

Me:Yah I wonder who is next

Erick: I bet it's not you

Me:what?No

(Then ppl walked in wearing black)

"Well well well isn't it the Blood himself"

Me:Vee?

Her: Hey

Erick: Vee?

Me:Hello

"Who is he my friend?"

"if its that one (Pointing to me) I wouldn't stay mad at him at all"

(She bit her lower lip she was sucking a loli pop)

Vee:Rose will you stop

Rose:Girlfriend your crazy he's hot than that detec...

(Vee hit her arm)

Her:Ouch!!!

Vee:SHUT UP

me: What is she talking about?

Vee:You don't ask questions here I do actually I'm here to give you an offer you can't refuse

Me:Oh pls

Her:I'm not playing Jake I'm here for business

- 
- 
- 

Chapter 47

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

Jake:Then what is your offer

Me:Help me get my revenge

Jake:Excuse me

Me:We want you and your team to work for us

Jake:What?

Me:And there's one boss that is ME

Him:Not is your dreams sweety

Me:I'm not asking you

Erick:And who's this beauty right here

Rose:Its Rose

(She giggled Gosh this girl and men)

Erick:Erick

(He kissed her hand she giggled)

Me: Oh God you two lovebirds we are in a serious meeting here but Jake doesn't want to corporate

Him: I'll never be Bossed by you

(I went to him)

Me: What is it Jake don't you want me in your team and my girls or

(I got close to his lips)

Me: Or you can't stand being near me without touching me

(I whispered he walked away oh he can't deny it)

Him: Look Vee no ok

Me: I don't care you got no choice

Coco: Can we pls get out of here I knew this wouldn't work

Him: Who's her?

(Coco was looking down)

Me: Your old friend

Him: Who?

Me: Look at me Coco

(She lifted her head)

Him: Coco?

Erick: Coco?

Me: Ahhh yes Coco. Now do you want to help us?

(I said smiling. Coco is was the wife of the man I killed who kidnapped me. Coco wanted revenge on him for betraying her and that Vivian girl she's gonna pay. I killed the husband Coco was very disappointed but she wants Vivian)

Jake: This is absurd.

"Sir Blue is..."

Me: My baby my Blue

(I went to take him. I kissed him all over his face. I set down with him I had tears in my eyes finally finally I'm with my baby again)

Jake:I accept

...

Jake:Kgm excuse me

Me:It was a offer you couldn't refuse Jake don't make it like it was your choice pls

(I brushed my baby's forehead.Shit he has his Father's looks.Jake came to sit next to me)

Him:He has your eyes

Me:But your looks

(We laughed)

Me:And the serious face

Him: I'm not serious

Me:You are

(We laughed.We looked into each others eyes damn I love this guy why he's hurting me sooo much.I cleared my throat I stood up)

Me:Back to business

Coco:Finally

Jake:Ok OK wait stop don't you think we need to know why?

Me:I'm not comfortable telling that story

Him:But we nee...

Me:If you visited me in jail you would know

Jake:But..

Me:I SAID I'm not comfortable telling that story Jake and stop making me yell I'm holding my baby

Rose:I'll tell them I mean he's right they need to know

Me:Fine I'll be outar here

(I got out of the room I left them there telling stories.Whenever I think about them I cry and I don't want to cry I'm still trying to be hardcover. I played with my baby he was giggling thank God he didn't cry.After a while Jake nealed at the door frame looking at me with red eyes and teary.)

Him:I'm sorry

(With a shaking voice that made me cry too.I placed Blue on his bed there)

Me:Its in the past

(He hugged me from behind I broke down I turned around he hugged me I hugged him back)

Him:I'm so sorry

(I swiped my tears)

Me:We need to work Jake

(Sniffing)

Me:I can't think about this anymore

(He made me look him in the eye)

Him:I'll do it I'll help you fight till death I promise

Me:Don't talk like that you will never die

Him:For you and our son I will bcz your the best thing that ever happened to me

(I sniff)

Him:I'll die for you Vee bcz I owe you that much I owe you my life bcz I took away yours.I love you

(He kissed me I kissed him back for such a long time.I pulled back the kiss had emotions and feelings I can't explain)

Me:We need to go

Him:Yes

(We went to join everyone)

Coco: Finally your here. Done making out?

Me:What? No

Coco:Really Jake

Jake: Eish I tried

Rose:She's thick headed

(They laughed)

Me:Whatever your laughing at is not funny

Jake:Totally babe

Me:We are not in that level

Him:I knew you will say that

Me:You know me so well

Him:Its my job to know

Me:Very funny

(We began talking business)

- 
- 
- 

Khanyo's POV

(I'm with Fernando)

Me:So what's next?

Him:Nothing I'll give them back their shipment I'm done with drugs

Me:About Jake?

Him:I'll make a plan no one will mess with Vee like that

Me:Yah what about Vivian

Him:I got his son

Me:By the way when did you kidnap him?

Him:Today

Me:How?I mean your here they are there

Him:I have my ways

Me:Hmmm I see and Vee? Wouldn't you protect Vee?

Him:I already know what she's planning today they are making a deal with thee Jake

Me:What?

Him:Yep

Me:Fernando how did you ...?

Him:I got Coco she's my girl

Me:Coco that devils wife?

Him:Ex wife

Me:You still sleeping with her?

Him: What no I'm not although I still like her

Me:You've always liked her what about the other women you've been with

Him:I've loved your mother and Vee's too

Me:Whatever Dad.

Him:Coco is helping Vee she's protecting her

Me:How did she know

Him:I told her

Me:What? Didn't she tell her

Him:No I told her to keep quiet

Me:Vee will hate you for this and for leaving her all these years and losing her mother while your still alive

Him:You think I don't know that.She's my Sophie my Sofia

- 
- 
- 

Chapter 48

2 months later

- 
- 
-

Vee's POV

(Since now I've fully trained it's time)

"Vee!!!!"

(That's Rose I ran downstairs I found her at the door talking)

Me:Jake?

Him:Vee

Rose: I'll live you too

(I grabbed his arm closing the door we went to a study there I closed the door there either)

Me:Do you want me back to jail? Why your here?

Him:I wanted to see you

Me:Why's that?Bcz the last time I checked I meant nothing to you.Just tell me how's my son

Him: He's fine

Me:I want to see him

Him:How your locked here

Me:I'll do anything for my son Jake

Him:You'll see him at Erick's place it's not safe at mine

Me:Great

Him:How are you?

Me:I'm angry Jake so angry I want to get this over with

Him: Don't you think you should let this go bcz...

Me:Excuse me?Then what will be the purpose of escaping Jail?

Him: We can run away and start a new life all three all of us

Me: I'm never getting back to you Jake

Him:Ever?

I breathed I don't want destruction at all

Me:Yes

I said looking away

Him:You wouldn't say that in my face looking at my eyes

That's true idiot

Me:Pls leave

Him:Your heart doesn't say that though

(I looked at him mad)

Me:Jake

Him:Your anger turns me on

He got close to me I folded my arms looking away.He made me look at him I did he smiled I pushed him off.He quickly grabbed my arm and twisted it behind my back then my body was on his

Him: I thought you were ready Vee

Me: Let me go!

Him:Get yourself off aren't you ready for war?

That shit hurt I moaned in pain a little.I kicked his leg since he was behind me

Him:Ouch!

He let go while holding his leg

Me:Don't ever handle me like that be grateful I didn't kick your nuts!!!

Him:Fine I'm sorry

Me:Get OUT!

He walked out slowly then I found myself on his arms kissing. Actually he grabbed me quicker my body language spoke the exact opposite of "Leave" of "Get out" We kissed he started rolling my shirt my hands were on his face shit he turned me ON he rubbed my thighs I swear I got wet.He stopped

Him:You said I should leave right?I'm leaving

(He walked out)

Me:FUCK YOU JAKE!!!!!!!

I said throwing a book at him he laughed and left.

Me:IDIOT!!!!!!!

Yerrr I'm horny asf.Rose walked in

Her:What happened we heard you yell

Me:Nothing he was being a jerk as always

Coco:Girls we got Vivian's location

Me:Isn't that beautiful?

Rose:How about we go tonight?

Coco:Yes

Me:I'll be there for sure I want to look as Sia's face

Rose:Me too

(She took a book that was laying on the table opened)

Her:How did this picture got here

Coco:Who is he?

Tears rolled down her cheeks

Her:My...my Father

Me:Your what?

Coco:WHAT?

(The shock on her face)

Rose:My Mom said he died but how did his picture got here

(Coco was stressed)

Me:Coco are you ok?

Her:Yah I'm OK

(She left)

Me:Don't cry girl

(I hugged her)

Her:Mom used to cry nights thinking about him I would too although I never met him.She said

he was a very honorable and kind person she ever knew.I miss her this picture reminded me of her

Me:I'm sorry come here

(She cried in my arms)

Her:Why did she leave me?Why?

(I cried too thinking about how my Mom died)

Her:It hurts sooo much Vee sooo much

Me:Shhh don't cry don't cry

(I was crying too)

- 
- 
- 

Coco's POV

I called Fernando he picked up instantly

Me:I got few minutes I'll be quick Billy's daughter is alive

Him: What?

Me:She was with me the whole time

Him:Where is she?

(I told him the whole story)

Him:She was in jail?Buy how?

Me:She was framed

Him:Who is digging their own grave?

Me:The Sia girl

Him:Shall I tell Billy

Me:I don't know its sad she thinks he died

Him:Billy will be so happy a daughter and from a woman he loved

Me:Yah but life happened

Him:But what now?

Me:I got everything under control

Him:That's why I love you

Me:Oh pls Fernando.What about your daughter she still talks about you you know

Him:She'll meet me soon

Me:Your hurting her do you know that?

Him: I know Coco I know

Me:She'll hate you for this.

- 
- 
- 

I'm sorry for disappearing guys but I'm back now

Continuation

- 
- 
- 

Vee's POV

So it's late me and the girls are going to that Vivian girl.

Rose:Done?

Me:Done

Coco:Ready?

Me:Ready

We were wearing black jeans, black polo necks,black leather jackets and black knee high boots.I got black short hair since I don't want to be noticed.Rose got long black straight hair she tied it back and Coco too.

Me:Bags?

Them:Got them

Me:We worked so much for this we robbed banks to have this we better not blew this up

Rose:Can we go already

We got into our Range Rover black car.Honey we got everything we could ever wish for in other words were rich.Coco drove since me and Rose can't.The ride was long if i may say but we arrived.

Me:Shit they have bodyguards

Coco:This was my house remember?I designed it with my husband that good for nothing.

Rose:Thank God

Coco:There's a secret door at the back yard that is leading to the basement inside

Rose:The bodyguards Coco

Me:I have an idea

I said looking at Rose

Her:Oh no what will I do

Me:You'll distrust them

Rose:How?

Me:You'll be like your asking for a uhmmm address while your talking to them we and Coco will sneak in

Rose: I got you girl and its too men anyway WHAT WILL I DO?

Coco:Once were in you will drive the car...

Rose: I can't drive

Me:Shit

Coco: What are we gonna do?

Me:What if I go in and you and Coco be in a car?

Coco:I know the house

Me:Damn and the guards know you.

Rose:Fuck!

I saw 2 maids walking out

Me:I have an Idea

Them:What?

Me:The maids

They looked and smiled

Me:We will be disguise as them

Coco followed them with a car and stopped in front of them.They screamed we got them in the car

Me:Shut up we won't hurt you we need your information and uniform

Rose:How many guards are there?

Them:Where?

Coco;Monica talk

1st maid:Coco?

Coco: Yah me now talk

Her:But how?

Coco:Monica talk

Her:Outside 2

Me:We noticed.How many inside?

Her:Inside the house 4

Me:Where and where?

Her:At the front door,back door I don't know where else

Coco:Why so many what happened?

Her: Ethan Vivian's Son disappeared she thinks she was kidnapped but she doesn't know by who

Coco:She has enemies other than us

Me:For how long?

Her:Over 2 months

Me:Who could do such a cruel thing?

Rose:Is Sia there?

Her;Yes

Me:Wonderful now we need your clothes

Her:But we can't we have to work tomorrow

I gave them money

Me:Take this and feed your families now the uniforms

Her:Oh thank you

Rose:You shouldn't have

Me:Rose pls the uniforms now

Her: Right here?

Me:No at the dressing room OF CAUSE HERE WOMAN

She quickly undressed her friend too.Me and Rose wore we gave them our jeans they Left

Rose:I loved that jean

Me:You'll get another one now let's move

We went to the guards

Man1:Forgot something

Me:Yes my vape my chest is bothering me

I said coughing

Them:Get in be quick

We got in rushing we tip toed to the back yard Coco got there she opened the basement she got in me and Rose got in the front dang this house is huge we saw the Guard Rose shot him with a silent gun then we hid him.

Me:One down 3 to go

Rose:I already love this

Me:You love killing

Her:They killed many innocent ppl these dogs I don't care

We walked in further I saw a guard at the end of the stairs

"Didn't you say your leaving?"

That's Sia's voice I know it. We looked down

Rose: I'm so sorry Miss we left something

Her: Be quick and get out of here

We went to the kitchen

Rose: I wanted to kill her

Me: The guards first

She was crying now she's mad

Me: Calm down

Her: If I didn't go to jail Mom would still be alive Vee I hate her so much

Me: You have pleasure on killing her I swear it

She calmed down. She went to the back door to kill the other guard I killed the one at the stairs we found Coco upstairs in the room at the right she said no one goes there so I guess it's from the basement

Coco: So?

Me: 1 more to go

Coco: Show time we hide in the house then we fired gunshots bodyguards came running we shot them they were 3 really now this is boring me. We got out we called Vivian and Sia to come down

Me: VIVIAN!!!!!! COME HERE!!!!

No one said a word I fire gunshot again

"Ok ok stop shooting"

Me: Then come down

She came down I don't know her I never saw her Sia followed

Me: Aw you look so cute scared

Rose: We meet again Sia

Coco: Isn't it the how herself

Me:So your the Vivian who was sleeping with my man

Her:He was the one who kept on coming back sweety

They both pulled out guns

Me:Oh would you look at that

Rose:Can't I shoot her already

Vivian:See this Coco?You made it happen you going to jail sleeping with those men and me getting money then I buy myself jewelries and be rich isn't that something

Coco:I'll kill you

Her: Oh in your dreams

Me:You should be ashamed your son is missing

Her;Yah whatever I don't care

Then we heard gunshots we all lay down I crawled to a corner I saw Vivian running I fired shots she fell then men came running wearing police uniform me and my girls fired shots it was bullets in the air but I wanted Vivian there at that time while shooting at the police other men walked in from the back door shooting at the police Ohhh I was amazed they look so hot.OK anyway back to the story other men defended us shooting at the police I couldn't see their faces tho I tried shooting at Vivian bcz she tried getting up I shot her arm she fell.The man in front of me won't let me shoot any further he blocked.They shoot at the police till they all dead.Then they stopped I pushed the guy of me I went straight to Vivian Rose went to Sia

Rose:She's dead

Vivian: Nooooo

With her voice breaking

Me:Crocodile tears

Coco: Nice shot Rose

Rose:Thank you

Me:I want to look at you when I kill you Vivian I turned her so she could face me I pointed a gun at her

Vivian:Kill me so my son can be lonely

I tears flew down my cheeks

Me:Don't you dare you don't want him

Her; He doesn't know that he loves his Mom

Me:Fuck you

"Baeb don't do this"

That was Jake talking I didn't care about him.I was shaking pointing a gun to her and crying

Her: Don't you have courage to kill me now I thought prison will toughen you up

Jake:SHUT UP VIVIAN

Her;I won't shut up did you tell her about the section we just had

Jake:Your lying baeb she's lying I swear

I cried even worse he tried touching me I shakes off

Her:Pull the trigger already Boo so my son can blame you for my death

This son this is eating me

Her:After everything I did to you I slept with your man I got you to jail I made you sleep with all those men I ordered you to be tortured then I slept with your man again damn I'm good

I cried Evey time she talks bcz they break me

Her:I separated you from your son

Me:Shut up

I said defeated

Her:Jake tell her what happened last night

Jake:I was with my son last night

Her:Stop lying to her she deserves the truth after the steamy section we had come on

I walked out crying I went to our car I set on the back crying I don't know what happened inside bcz I didn't care even if she dies or not I barried my head on my laps crying. This woman is Evil not mentioning Jake then I heard the door open up I smelled his Cologne.

Him: Baeb she's lying

Me:Get out man get out

I couldn't shout or yell my power just dropped

Him: I swear I was with Blue

Me: Jake how could you? What have I ever done to you all I ever did was to love you.

I cried

Me: It hurts so much to love you soooooo much. I want nothing di you hear me nothing to do with you other than my son

Him: Not like this pls hear me out I was with Blue Vee I love you I love only you. Pls don't shut me out

I closed my eyes with my hands

Me: I love you Jake but I can't love you you keep hurting me

Him: Vee I'm sorry pls our son need us both

Me: Pls leave

I get the hands off my face I look away he made me look at him.

Him: I'll never hurt you again I protected you there bcz I love you

He wiped my tears I looked at him

Him: I'll do anything for you pls Vivian is lying

Me: Then---then why did she say that?

Him: To hurt you. Don't cry pls

He wiped my tears I closed my eyes.

Him: Your still beautiful even if crying

Then I felt his lips on mine we kissed passionate but I cried then we stopped

Me: Pls leave

Him: Vee...

Me: Leave I beg you

He left I cried even more and that's when I noticed I got shot in my left leg I was bleeding the girls got in and drove back home

- 
- 
-